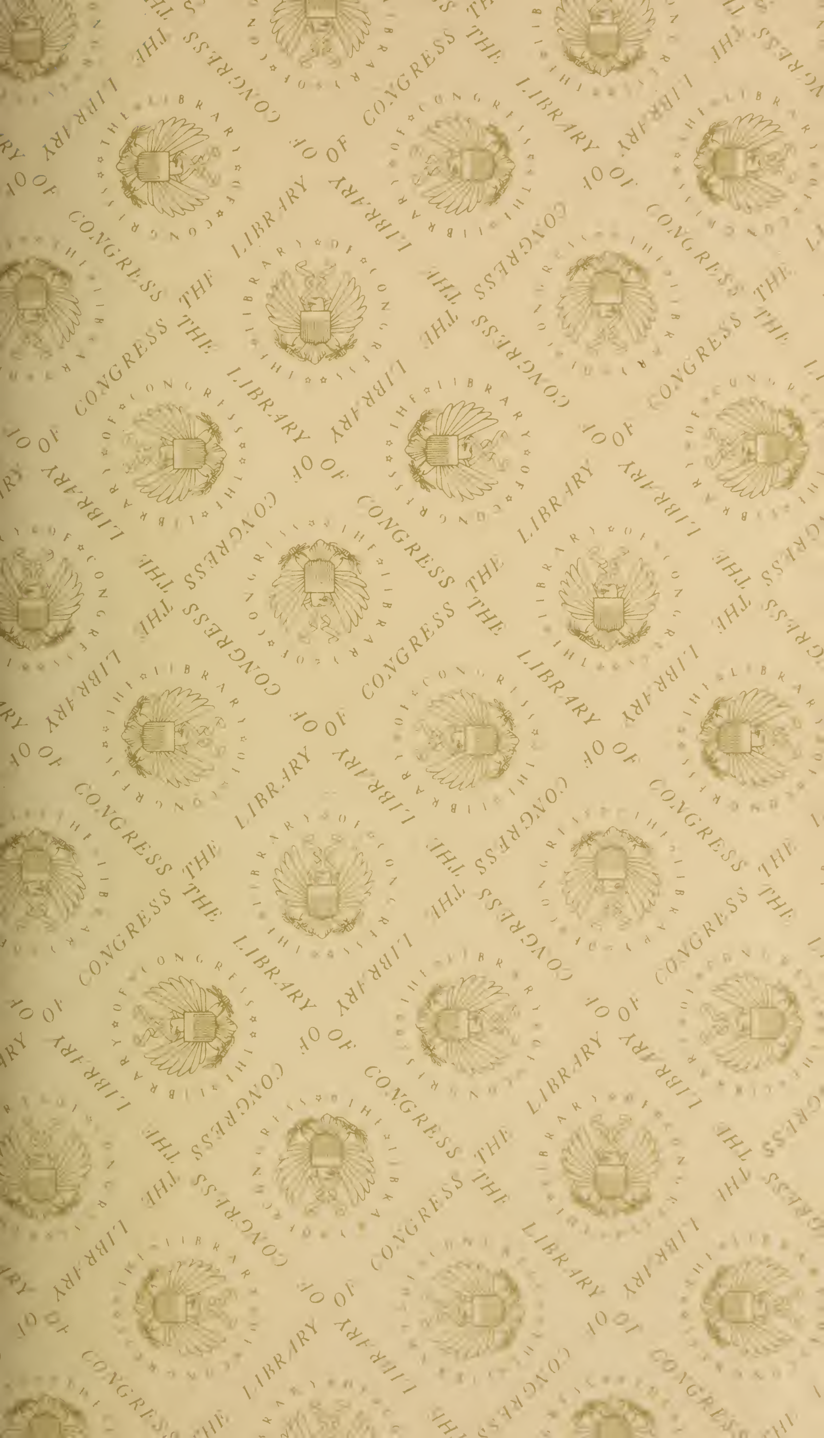



THE LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

COURS COMPLET

DE

LANGUE ANGLAISE.

PARIS. — ÉVERAT, IMPRIMEUR, RUE DU CADRAN, 16.

ÉMANCIPATION INTELLECTUELLE.

COURS COMPLET
DE
LANGUE ANGLAISE,

A L'USAGE DES ÉLÈVES DU LYCÉE NATIONAL,

PAR DE SÉPRÉS,

Directeur de cette Institution.



Paris.

AU LYCÉE NATIONAL, RUE DE MONCEAU DU ROULE, N° 9;
ET A LA LIBRAIRIE SPÉCIALE POUR L'ENSEIGNEMENT UNIVERSEL,
CHEZ MANSUT FILS, RUE DES MATHURINS SAINT-JACQUES, N° 17.

1834.

AVANT-PROPOS.

On doit étudier une langue étrangère comme on étudie la langue maternelle, par l'exercice répété de la mémoire, du jugement et de la pensée. La mémoire fait retenir les signes ; le jugement complète ce premier travail par les rapports et les déductions qu'il en tire ; puis la pensée, en s'appliquant sans cesse à des objets divers, et en se repliant sur elle-même, découvre le juste emploi des ressources acquises.

Par conséquent, l'étude de la langue anglaise consiste à se familiariser d'abord avec les mots de cette langue, pour les employer selon les con-

ventions admises par les Anglais ; à s'assouplir ensuite aux formes obligées du discours, conformément aux usages qui les déterminent; enfin, à arriver par la connaissance de l'homme à celle de la langue qu'il parle, comme l'unique moyen d'apprécier la valeur exacte des signes. Car une langue est autre chose qu'un simple assemblage de tournures et d'expressions; c'est l'histoire de tout un peuple, et les mots dont elle se compose ne sont, pour ainsi dire, que le reflet des mœurs et des opinions des hommes qui la parlent.

Il faut donc, pour apprendre l'anglais, devenir *homme anglais;* et oubliant en quelque sorte sa propre langue, ne puiser que dans celle-ci les expressions de ses pensées et de ses sentimens. Mais alors, comme pour la langue maternelle, les unes et les autres doivent être simultanées; et on a besoin de compter sur l'aide prompte et fidèle de la mémoire.

Les moyens les plus convenables pour atteindre ce double but étant indiqués par la nature, c'est elle aussi qu'il faut consulter pour l'ordre et l'espèce des exercices qui conduisent par la

voie la plus rapide à la connaissance de la langue.

Nous aurons soin de développer chacun d'eux à la place qui lui sera assignée ; en attendant, nous n'aurons qu'à recommander :

1° D'apprendre à prononcer, en cherchant à imiter la prononciation d'un Anglais, qu'on écoute attentivement ;

2° D'apprendre par cœur, pour répéter tous les jours, le texte et la traduction d'un certain nombre de pages, de manière à être promptement en état de traduire, sans faute et de mémoire, une phrase anglaise prise au hasard, et réciproquement, de réciter sans hésitation la phrase anglaise qui correspond à une phrase française désignée.

Les différentes matières qui doivent servir de base à ces exercices de mémoire, se trouvent réunies sous le titre d'*Epitome ;* mais comme la quantité en est augmentée ou rendue moindre à volonté, quoique toutefois dans une juste mesure, on peut se borner à ce qui est compris entre les pages 38 et 115 inclusivement. Pour le surplus, on connaîtra, lors de l'indication des exercices, le moyen d'en tirer parti.

EPITOME.

TÉLÉMAQUE.

LIVRE I.

SOMMAIRE

DU LIVRE PREMIER.

Télémaque, conduit par Minerve sous la figure de Mentor, aborde après un naufrage dans l'île de Calypso, qui regrettait encore le départ d'Ulysse. La déesse le reçoit favorablement, conçoit de la passion pour lui, lui offre l'immortalité, et lui demande ses aventures. Il lui raconte son voyage à Pylos et à Lacédémone, son naufrage sur la côte de Sicile, le péril où il fut d'être immolé aux mânes d'Anchise, le secours que Mentor et lui donnèrent à Aceste dans une incursion de barbares, et le soin que ce roi eut de reconnaître ce service en leur donnant un vaisseau tyrien pour retourner en leur pays.

TELEMACHUS.

BOOK I.

THE ARGUMENT.

BOOK THE FIRST.

Telemachus, guided by Mentor, lands after a shipwreck in the Island of Calypso, who still regretted the departure of Ulysses. The Goddess receives him kindly, conceives a passion for him, offers him immortality, and desires an account of his adventures. He relates to her his voyage to Pylos and Lacedœmon; his shipwreck on the coast of Sicily; the danger he was in of being sacrificed to the manes of Anchises; the assistance which Mentor and he gave Aceste in an incursion of barbarians, and the care which this king took to requite their service by giving them a Tyrian ship to return to their own country.

AVENTURES

DE

TÉLÉMAQUE.

LIVRE PREMIER.

Calypso ne pouvait se consoler du départ d'Ulysse. Dans sa douleur, elle se trouvait malheureuse d'être immortelle. Sa grotte ne résonnait plus de son chant : les nymphes qui la servaient n'osaient lui parler. Elle se promenait souvent seule sur les gazons fleuris dont un printemps éternel bordait son île ; mais ces beaux lieux, loin de modérer sa douleur, ne faisaient que lui rappeler le triste souvenir d'Ulysse, qu'elle y avait vu tant de fois auprès d'elle. Souvent elle demeurait immobile sur le rivage de la mer, qu'elle arrosait de ses larmes ; et elle était sans cesse tournée vers le côté où le vaisseau d'Ulysse, fendant les ondes, avait disparu à ses yeux.

Tout à coup elle aperçut les débris d'un navire qui venait de faire naufrage, des bancs de rameurs mis en pièces, des rames écartées çà et là sur le sable, un gouvernail, un mât, des cordages flottans sur la côte : puis elle découvre de loin deux hommes, dont l'un paraissait âgé ; l'autre, quoique jeune, ressemblait à Ulysse. Il avait sa douceur et sa fierté,

ADVENTURES

OF

TELEMACHUS.

BOOK I.

Calypso could not console herself for the departure of Ulysses: in her grief she felt unhappy at being immortal. Her grotto no longer resounded with her voice: the nymphs who served her, dared not speak to her. She often walked alone upon the flowery turf with which an eternal spring covered her island: but these beautiful scenes, far from alleviating her grief, did but recall to her mind the sad remembrance of Ulysses, whom she had so often seen there with her. She frequently stood motionless on the sea-shore which she watered with her tears, and was incessantly turned towards the spot where the ship of Ulysses, ploughing the waves, had disappeared from her sight.

On a sudden she perceived the fragments of a vessel that had just been wrecked; rowers benches broken in pieces, oars scattered here and there upon the sand, a rudder, a mast and cordage floating towards the shore. She then discovered at a distance two men: one of them appeared to be in years; the other, though young, resembled Ulysses.

avec sa taille et sa démarche majestueuse. La déesse comprit que c'était Télémaque, fils de ce héros. Mais, quoique les dieux surpassent de loin en connaissance tous les hommes, elle ne put découvrir qui était cet homme vénérable dont Télémaque était accompagné : c'est que les dieux supérieurs cachent aux inférieurs tout ce qu'il leur plaît ; et Minerve, qui accompagnait Télémaque sous la figure de Mentor, ne voulait pas être connue de Calypso.

Cependant Calypso se réjouissait d'un naufrage qui mettait dans son île le fils d'Ulysse, si semblable à son père. Elle s'avance vers lui, et sans faire semblant de savoir qui il est : D'où vous vient, lui dit-elle, cette témérité d'aborder en mon île? Sachez, jeune étranger, qu'on ne vient point impunément dans mon empire. Elle tâchait de couvrir sous ces paroles menaçantes la joie de son cœur, qui éclatait malgré elle sur son visage.

Télémaque lui répondit : O vous, qui que vous soyez, mortelle ou déesse, quoique à vous voir on ne puisse vous prendre que pour une divinité, seriez-vous insensible au malheur d'un fils qui, cherchant son père à la merci des vents et des flots, a vu briser son navire contre vos rochers? Quel est donc votre père que vous cherchez? reprit la déesse. Il se nomme Ulysse, dit Télémaque; c'est un des rois qui ont, après un siége de dix ans, renversé la fameuse Troie. Son nom fut célèbre dans toute la Grèce et dans toute l'Asie, par sa valeur dans les combats, et plus encore par sa sagesse dans les conseils. Maintenant, errant dans toute l'étendue des mers, il parcourt tous les écueils les plus terribles. Sa patrie semble fuir devant lui. Pénélope, sa femme, et moi, qui suis son fils, nous avons perdu l'espérance de le revoir. Je cours, avec les mêmes dangers que lui, pour apprendre où il est. Mais que dis-je? peut-être qu'il est maintenant enseveli dans les profonds abîmes de la mer. Ayez pitié de nos malheurs ; et si vous savez, ô déesse,

He possessed his mild and noble countenance, with his majestic gait and stature. The Goddess immediatly recognised Telemachus, the son of that hero : but though the Gods far surpass all men in knowledge, she could not discover who the venerable person was by whom Telemachus was accompanied, because the superior Gods conceal from those who are inferior whatever they please; and Minerva, who accompanied Telemachus under the shape of Mentor, did not wish to be known by Calypso. In the mean time Calypso rejoiced at a shipwreck which had thrown upon her island the son of Ulysses, so like his father. She advances towards him, and without appearing to know who he is : From whence comes, said she to him, this presumption to land in my island? Know, young stranger, that none enter my empire with impunity. She endeavoured to conceal under these threatening words the joy of her heart, which, in spite of her, appeared in her countenance.

Telemachus answered ; O! whoever you are, whether mortal or Goddess (though none can see you without taking you for a Deity), can you be insensible to the misfortunes of a son who, in seeking his father at the mercy of the winds and waves, has seen his vessel wrecked against your rocks? Who then is the father whom you are in quest of? replied the Goddess. He is called Ulysses, said Telemachus; he is one of the kings who, after a ten years siege, subverted the famous city of Troy. His name was renowned through all Greece and Asia for his valour in combat, and still more so for his wisdom in council. Now wandering o'er the whole extent of the seas, he runs the greatest dangers. His country seems to fly before him. Penelope his wife and I who am his son, have lost all hope of ever seeing him again. I run the same dangers as him to learn where he is. But, what do I say! perhaps he is now buried in the profound abysses of the sea. Pity our misfor-

ce que les destinées ont fait pour sauver ou pour perdre Ulysse, daignez en instruire son fils Télémaque.

Calypso, étonnée et attendrie de voir dans une si vive jeunesse tant de sagesse et d'éloquence, ne pouvait rassasier ses yeux en le regardant; et elle demeurait en silence. Enfin elle lui dit : Télémaque, nous vous apprendrons ce qui est arrivé à votre père. Mais l'histoire en est longue; il est temps de vous délasser de tous vos travaux. Venez dans ma demeure où je vous recevrai comme mon fils : venez, vous serez ma consolation dans cette solitude; et je ferai votre bonheur, pourvu que vous sachiez en jouir.

Télémaque suivait la déesse environnée d'une foule de jeunes nymphes, au-dessus desquelles elle s'élevait de toute la tête, comme un grand chêne dans une forêt élève ses branches épaisses au-dessus de tous les arbres qui l'environnent. Il admirait l'éclat de sa beauté, la riche pourpre de sa robe longue et flottante, ses cheveux noués par-derrière, négligemment, mais avec grâce, le feu qui sortait de ses yeux, et la douceur qui tempérait cette vivacité. Mentor, les yeux baissés, gardant un silence modeste, suivait Télémaque.

On arriva à la porte de la grotte de Calypso, où Télémaque fut surpris de voir, avec une apparence de simplicité rustique, des objets propres à charmer les yeux. Il est vrai qu'on n'y voyait ni or, ni argent, ni marbre, ni colonnes, ni tableaux, ni statues; mais cette grotte était taillée dans le roc en voûte pleine de rocailles et de coquilles; elle était tapissée d'une jeune vigne qui étendait ses branches souples également de tous côtés. Les doux zéphyrs conservaient en ce lieu, malgré les ardeurs du soleil, une délicieuse fraîcheur; des fontaines, coulant avec un doux murmure sur des prés semés d'amaranthes et de violettes, formaient en divers lieux des bains aussi purs et aussi clairs que le cristal; mille fleurs naissantes émaillaient les tapis verts dont la

tunes; and if you know, O Goddess, what the destinies have done to save or to destroy Ulysses, deign to inform his son Telemachus of it.

Calypso, surprised and moved to see in so young a man so much wisdom and eloquence, could not sufficiently satisfy her eyes in beholding him, and she remained silent. At length she said to him: we will inform you, Telemachus, what has happened to your father; but it is a long history, and it is time you should refresh yourself after your toils. Come into my abode, I will receive you as my son; come, you shall be my comfort in this solitude; and I will give you happiness provided you know how to enjoy it.

Telemachus followed the Goddess, accompanied by a crowd of young nymphs, above whom she raised herself a whole head, as a large oak in a forest raises its thick branches above all the surrounding trees. He admired the brilliancy of her beauty, the rich purple of her long floating dress, her hair gracefully but negligently tied behind, the fire which flashed from her eyes, and the mildness which tempered its vivacity. Mentor, with downcast eyes, keeping modestly silent, followed Telemachus.

They came to the entrance of Calypso's grotto, where Telemachus was surprised to see, with an appearance of rural simplicity, every thing that could charm the eye. It is true there was neither gold, or silver, nor marble, nor columns, nor pictures, nor statues to be found; but this grotto was hewn out of the rock, in arches lined with pebbles and shells; its tapestry was a young vine which extended its supple branches equally on every side. Gentle zephirs here preserved, in spite of the beams of the sun, a delightful coolness; fountains, sweetly meandering through meadows sown with amaranths and violets formed, in several places, baths as pure and clear as cristal. A thousand springing flowers enamelled the verdant carpets which

grotte était environnée. Là on trouvait un bois de ces arbres touffus qui portent des pommes d'or, et dont la fleur, qui se renouvelle dans toutes les saisons, répand le plus doux de tous les parfums; ce bois semblait couronner ces belles prairies, et formait une nuit que les rayons du soleil ne pouvaient percer : là on n'entendait jamais que le chant des oiseaux, ou le bruit d'un ruisseau qui, se précipitant du haut d'un rocher, tombait à gros bouillons pleins d'écume, et s'enfuyait au travers de la prairie.

La grotte de la déesse était sur le penchant d'une colline : de là on découvrait la mer, quelquefois claire et unie comme une glace, quelquefois follement irritée contre les rochers, où elle se brisait en gémissant et élevant ses vagues comme des montagnes; d'un autre côté, on voyait une rivière où se formaient des îles bordées de tilleuls fleuris et de hauts peupliers qui portaient leurs têtes superbes jusque dans les nues. Les divers canaux qui formaient ces îles semblaient se jouer dans la campagne : les uns roulaient leurs eaux claires avec rapidité; d'autres avaient une eau paisible et dormante; d'autres, par de longs détours, revenaient sur leurs pas, comme pour remonter vers leur source, et semblaient ne pouvoir quitter ces bords enchantés. On apercevait de loin des collines et des montagnes qui se perdaient dans les nues, et dont la figure bizarre formait un horizon à souhait pour le plaisir des yeux. Les montagnes voisines étaient couvertes de pampre vert qui pendait en festons : le raisin, plus éclatant que la pourpre, ne pouvait se cacher sous les feuilles, et la vigne était accablée sous son fruit. Le figuier, l'olivier, le grenadier, et tous les autres arbres, couvraient la campagne, et en faisaient un grand jardin.

Calypso ayant montré à Télémaque toutes ces beautés naturelles, lui dit : Reposez-vous; vos habits sont mouillés, il est temps que vous en changiez : ensuite, nous nous re-

surrounded the grotto. Here was found an entire wood of tufted trees which bear golden apples, and whose blossoms, which are renewed in all seasons, shed the sweetest of all perfumes. This wood appeared to crown those beautiful meadows, and formed a shade which the rays of the sun could not penetrate. Nothing was ever heard but the warbling of birds, or the murmurs of a brook, which, rushing from the top of a rock, fell in large and frothy streams, and fled across the meadow.

The Goddess's grotto was on the declivity of a hill, from whence one beheld the sea; sometimes clear and smooth as glass, sometimes madly dashing against the rocks on which it broke its waves bellowing and swelling like mountains. From another side was seen a river, in which were islands bordered with blooming limes, and lofty poplars, which raised their haughty heads even with the clouds. The several channels, which formed these islands, seemed sporting in the plain. Some rolled their limpid waters with rapidity; some had a peaceful and sleepy stream; others by long windings ran back again to reascend as it were to their source, and appeared unable to leave these enchanting borders. At a distance were seen hills and mountains, which lost themselves in the clouds, and formed, by their fantastic figures, as delightful an horizon as the eye could wish to behold. The neighbouring mountains were covered with verdant vines hanging in festoons; the grapes, brighter than purple, could not conceal themselves under the leaves, and the vine was over-loaded with its fruit. The fig, the olive, the pomgranate, and every other tree overspread the plain, and gave it the appearance of a large garden.

Calypso, having shewn Telemachus all these natural beauties, said to him: Repose yourself; your garments are wet, it is time for you to change them. I will afterwards

verrons, et je vous raconterai des histoires dont votre cœur sera touché. En même temps elle le fit entrer avec Mentor dans le lieu le plus secret et le plus reculé d'une grotte voisine de celle où la déesse demeurait. Les nymphes avaient eu soin d'allumer en ce lieu un grand feu de bois de cèdre, dont la bonne odeur se répandait de tous côtés, et elles y avaient laissé des habits pour les nouveaux hôtes.

Télémaque, voyant qu'on lui avait destiné une tunique d'une laine fine dont la blancheur effaçait celle de la neige, et une robe de pourpre avec une broderie d'or, prit le plaisir qui est naturel à un jeune homme en considérant cette magnificence.

Mentor lui dit d'un ton grave : Est-ce donc là, ô Télémaque, les pensées qui doivent occuper le cœur du fils d'Ulysse ? Songez plutôt à soutenir la réputation de votre père, et à vaincre la fortune qui vous persécute. Un jeune homme qui aime à se parer vainement comme une femme est indigne de la sagesse et de la gloire : la gloire n'est due qu'à un cœur qui sait souffrir la peine et fouler aux pieds les plaisirs.

Télémaque répondit en soupirant : Que les dieux me fassent périr plutôt que de souffrir que la mollesse et la volupté s'emparent de mon cœur ! Non, non, le fils d'Ulysse ne sera jamais vaincu par les charmes d'une vie lâche et efféminée. Mais quelle faveur du ciel nous a fait trouver, après notre naufrage, cette déesse ou cette mortelle qui nous comble de biens ?

Craignez, repartit Mentor, qu'elle ne vous accable de maux ; craignez ses trompeuses douceurs plus que les écueils qui ont brisé votre navire : le naufrage et la mort sont moins funestes que les plaisirs qui attaquent la vertu. Gardez-vous bien de croire ce qu'elle vous racontera. La jeunesse est présomptueuse : elle se promet tout d'elle-même ; quoique fragile, elle croit pouvoir tout, et n'avoir jamais

again see you, and your heart will be touched with what I shall relate. The Goddess then led him and Mentor into the most secret and retired part of a grotto, next to that in which she herself resided. In this apartment the nymphs had taken care to light a large fire of cedar wood, whose fragrant odor diffused itself on all sides; they had also placed garments there for their new guests.

Telemachus, seeing they had alloted him a tunic of fine wool, the whiteness of which eclipsed that of the snow, and a purple robe embroidered with gold, felt the pleasure which is so natural to a youth at the sight of such magnificence.

Mentor said to him in a grave tone : Are these, Telemachus, the thoughts which ought to possess the heart of the son of Ulysses? Think rather of supporting your father's reputation, and of overcoming the misfortune which persecutes you. A young man who loves to deck himself vainly like a woman, is unworthy of wisdom and glory; glory is only due to him who knows how to bear pain, and tramples pleasures under foot.

Telemachus answered sighing: May the Gods destroy me rather than that I should suffer luxury and voluptuousness to take possession of my heart! no, no, the son of Ulysses shall never be vanquished by the charms of a soft and effeminate life. But how gracious is heaven in directing us after our shipwreck to this Goddess, or mortal, who loads us with kindness!

Fear, replied Mentor, lest she load you with evils : fear the sweet, deceitful words more than the rocks which dashed your vessel in pieces. Shipwreck and death are less fatal than pleasures which attack virtue. Take heed not to credit what she will relate to you. Youth is presumptuous; hopes every thing from itself, and tho' frail, thinks itself all sufficient, and that it has never any thing to

rien à craindre ; elle se confie légèrement et sans précaution. Gardez-vous d'écouter les paroles douces et flatteuses de Calypso, qui se glisseront comme un serpent sous les fleurs ; craignez le poison caché ; défiez-vous de vous-même, et attendez toujours mes conseils.

Ensuite ils retournèrent auprès de Calypso, qui les attendait. Les nymphes, avec leurs cheveux tressés et des habits blancs, servirent d'abord un repas simple, mais exquis pour le goût et pour la propreté. On n'y voyait aucune autre viande que celle des oiseaux qu'elles avaient pris dans des filets, ou des bêtes qu'elles avaient percées de leurs flèches à la chasse ; un vin plus doux que le nectar coulait des grands vases d'argent dans des tasses d'or couronnées de fleurs. On apporta dans des corbeilles tous les fruits que le printemps promet, et que l'automne répand sur la terre. En même temps, quatre jeunes nymphes se mirent à chanter. D'abord elles chantèrent les combats des dieux contre les géans, puis les amours de Jupiter et de Sémélé, la naissance de Bacchus et son éducation conduite par le vieux Silène ; la course d'Atalante et d'Hippomène, qui fut vainqueur par le moyen des pommes d'or venues du jardin des Hespérides ; enfin, la guerre de Troie fut aussi chantée ; les combats d'Ulysse et sa sagesse furent élevés jusqu'aux cieux. La première des nymphes, qui s'appelait Leucothoë, joignit les accords de sa lyre aux douces voix de toutes les autres.

Quand Télémaque entendit le nom de son père, les larmes qui coulèrent le long de ses joues donnèrent un nouveau lustre à sa beauté. Mais comme Calypso aperçut qu'il ne pouvait manger et qu'il était saisi de douleur, elle fit signe aux nymphes. A l'instant on chanta le combat des Centaures avec les Lapithes, et la descente d'Orphée aux enfers pour en retirer Eurydice.

Quand le repas fut fini, la déesse prit Télémaque, et lui parla ainsi : Vous voyez, fils du grand Ulysse, avec

fear; it is credulous and unwary. Be sure not to listen to Calypso's sweet and flattering words, which will insinuate themselves like a serpent under flowers. Suspect their hidden poison, mistrust yourself, and always wait for my advice.

They afterwards returned to Calypso, who was waiting for them. The nymphs with their hair braided and white garments immediately served a plain repast, but exquisite in regard to taste and elegance. The only meat was that of the birds they had taken in their nets, or that of the beast they had killed with their arrows iu the chace. Wine, more delicious than nectar, flowed from large silver vases into golden cups crowned with flowers. They brought baskets of all the fruits spring promises, and autumn lavishes on the earth. At the same time, four young nymphs began to sing. They first sung the war of the Gods against the giants, then the loves of Jupiter and Semele, the birth of Bacchus, and his education under old Silenus; the race of Atalanta and Hippomenes, who was conquered by means of the golden apples gathered in the gardens of the Hesperides; at last the Trojan war was likewise sung, and the combats and wisdom of Ulysses extolled to the skies. The chief of the nymphs, whose name was Leucothoe, joined the harmony of her lyre to the sweet voices of all the others. When Telemachus heard the name of his father, the tears which ran down his cheeks gave a new lustre to his beauty. But as Calypso perceived he could not eat, and that he was seized with grief, she made a sign to the nymphs; upon which they sung the battle of the Centaurs with the Lapithæ, and the descent of Orpheus into hell to fetch Eurydice from thence.

When the repast was ended, the Goddess took Telemachus aside, and thus spoke to him: You see, son of the

quelle faveur je vous reçois. Je suis immortelle ; nul mortel ne peut entrer dans cette île sans être puni de sa témérité ; et votre naufrage même ne vous garantirait pas de mon indignation, si d'ailleurs je ne vous aimais. Votre père a eu le même bonheur que vous : mais hélas ! il n'a pas su en profiter. Je l'ai gardé long-temps dans cette île : il n'a tenu qu'à lui d'y vivre avec moi dans un état immortel ; mais l'aveugle passion de retourner dans sa misérable patrie lui fit rejeter tous ces avantages. Vous voyez tout ce qu'il a perdu pour Ithaque, qu'il n'a pu revoir. Il voulut me quitter, il partit ; et je fus vengée par la tempête : son vaisseau, après avoir été long-temps le jouet des vents, fut enseveli dans les ondes ; profitez d'un si triste exemple. Après son naufrage, vous n'avez plus rien à espérer, ni pour le revoir, ni pour régner jamais dans l'île d'Ithaque après lui : consolez vous de l'avoir perdu, puisque vous trouvez ici une divinité prête à vous rendre heureux, et un royrume qu'elle vous offre.

La déesse ajouta à ces paroles de longs discours pour montrer combien Ulysse avait été heureux auprès d'elle : elle raconta ses aventures dans la caverne du cyclope Polyphème, et chez Antiphates, roi des Lestrigons : elle n'oublia pas ce qui lui était arrivé dans l'île de Circé, fille du Soleil, ni les dangers qu'il avait courus entre Scylla et Charybde. Elle représenta la dernière tempête que Neptune avait excitée contre lui quand il partit d'auprès d'elle. Elle voulut faire entendre qu'il était péri dans ce naufrage, et elle supprima son arrivée dans l'île des Phéaciens.

Télémaque, qui s'était d'abord abandonné trop promptement à la joie d'être si bien traité de Calypso, reconnut enfin son artifice et la sagesse des conseils que Mentor venait de lui donner. Il répondit en peu de mots : O déesse, pardonnez à ma douleur : maintenant je ne puis que m'affliger, peut-être que dans la suite j'aurai plus de force pour goûter la

great Ulysses, with what favour I receive you; I am immortal; no man can enter this island without being punished for his temerity; and even your shipwreck could not save you from my indignation, if I did not love you. Your father was as fortunate as you; but alas! he was not wise enough to turn it to his advantage. I detained him a long time in this island; he might here have lived with me in a state of immortality; but the blind desire of returning to his wretched country, made him reject all these advantages. You see all he has lost for Ithaca, which he will never again see. He was resolved to leave me; he departed, and I was revenged by the tempest: his vessel, having long been the sport of the winds, was buried in the waves. Take warning by so sad an example. After his shipwreck you can have no hopes of either seeing him again, or of ever reigning in the island of Ithaca after him; be not afflicted at this loss, since you find a Goddess ready to make you happy and a kingdom which she offers you. To these words Calypso added a long discourse to shew how happy Ulysses had been with her. She recited his adventures in the cave of Polyphemus the Cyclop, and in the country of Antiphates king of the Lestrigons. She did not forget what happened to him in the island of Circe daughter of the Sun, and the dangers he was in between Scylla and Charybdis. She described the last storm which Neptune had raised against him when he departed from her; and designing to impress Telemachus with the idea that he had perished in this tempest, suppressed his arrival in the island of the Phæacians.

Telemachus, who at first had too hastily abandoned himself to joy at being so well treated by Calypso, now perceived her artifice, and the wisdom of the counsels Mentor had just given him. He replied in a few words: O Goddess, excuse my sorrow. I can at present only

fortune que vous m'offrez : laissez-moi en ce moment pleurer mon père ; vous savez mieux que moi combien il mérite d'être pleuré.

Calypso n'osa d'abord le presser davantage : elle feignit même d'entrer dans sa douleur, et de s'attendrir pour Ulysse. Mais, pour mieux connaître les moyens de toucher le cœur du jeune homme, elle lui demanda comment il avait fait naufrage, et par quelles aventures il était sur ces côtes. Le récit de mes malheurs, dit-il, serait trop long. Non, non, répondit-elle ; il me tarde de les savoir, hâtez-vous de me les raconter. Elle le pressa long-temps. Enfin il ne put lui résister, il parla ainsi:

J'étais parti d'Ithaque pour aller demander aux autres rois revenus du siége de Troie des nouvelles de mon père. Les amans de ma mère Pénélope furent surpris de mon départ ; j'avais pris soin de le leur cacher, connaissant leur perfidie. Nestor, que je vis à Pylos, ni Ménélas, qui me reçut avec amitié dans Lacédémone, ne purent m'apprendre si mon père était encore en vie. Lassé de vivre toujours en suspens et dans l'incertitude, je me résolus d'aller dans la Sicile, où j'avais ouï dire que mon père avait été jeté par les vents. Mais le sage Mentor, que vous voyez ici présent, s'opposait à ce téméraire dessein : il me représentait d'un côté les cyclopes, géans monstrueux qui dévorent les hommes ; de l'autre, la flotte d'Énée et des Troyens, qui étaient sur ces côtes. Ces Troyens, disait-il, sont animés contre tous les Grecs, mais surtout ils répandraient avec plaisir le sang du fils d'Ulysse. Retournez, continuait-il, en Ithaque ; peut-être que votre père, aimé des dieux, y sera aussitôt que vous. Mais si les dieux ont résolu sa perte, s'il ne doit jamais revoir sa patrie, du moins il faut que vous alliez le venger, délivrer votre mère, montrer votre sagesse à tous les peuples, et faire voir en vous à toute la

grieve. Hereafter I may perhaps he better able ro relish the happiness you offer me. Permit me now to weep my father. You know better than I how much he deserves to be lamented.

Calypso, not daring to urge him further, pretended even to sympathise with him in his grief, and to pity Ulysses. But the better to discover the means of gaining the heart of this youth, she asked him how he was wrecked, and by what accident he was on her coast. The relation of my misfortunes, said he, would be too tedious. No, no, replied she, I long to know them; make haste and relate them to me. She pressed him a long while: at length, no longer being able to deny her, he thus began:

I left Ithaca in order to enquire of the other kings who were returned from the siege of Troy some news of my father. My mother Penelope's suitors were surprised at my departure; for being aware of their treachery, I had taken care to conceal it from them. Neither Nestor, whom I saw at Pylos, nor Menelaus, who received me in a friendly manner at Lacedæmon, could inform me whether my father was still alive. Weary of living continually in suspense and uncertainty, I resolved to go into Sicily, where I had heard my father had been driven by the winds. But the sage Mentor, whom you see here present, opposed this rash design; representing to me the Cyclops, monstrous giants who devour men, on one side; and on the other, the fleet of Æneas and the Trojans who were on those coasts. The Trojans, said he, are exasperated against all the Greeks, and would take a singular pleasure in shedding the blood of the son of Ulysses. Return, continued he, to Ithaca; perhaps your father, beloved of the Gods, will be there as soon as you: but if the Gods have decreed his destruction, if he must never again see his country, you should at least go to

Grèce un roi aussi digne de régner que le fut jamais Ulysse lui-même.

Ces paroles étaient salutaires, mais je n'étais pas assez prudent pour les écouter; je n'écoutai que ma passion. Le sage Mentor m'aima jusqu'à me suivre dans un voyage téméraire que j'entreprenais contre ses conseils; et les dieux permirent que je fisse une faute qui devait servir à me corriger de ma présomption.

Pendant que Télémaque parlait, Calypso regardait Mentor. Elle était étonnée : elle croyait sentir en lui quelque chose de divin; mais elle ne pouvait démêler ses pensées confuses; ainsi elle demeurait pleine de crainte et de défiance à la vue de cet inconnu. Alors elle appréhenda de laisser voir son trouble. Continuez, dit elle à Télémaque, et satisfaites ma curiosité. Télémaque reprit ainsi:

Nous eûmes assez long-temps un vent favorable pour aller en Sicile; mais ensuite une noire tempête déroba le ciel à nos yeux, et nous fûmes enveloppés dans une profonde nuit. A la lueur des éclairs, nous aperçûmes d'autres vaisseaux exposés au même péril, et nous reconnûmes bientôt que c'étaient les vaisseaux d'Énée; ils n'étaient pas moins à craindre pour nous que les rochers. Alors je compris, mais trop tard, ce que l'ardeur d'une jeunesse imprudente m'avait empêché de considérer attentivement. Mentor parut, dans ce danger, non-seulement ferme et intrépide, mais encore plus gai qu'à l'ordinaire; c'était lui qui m'encourageait; je sentais qu'il m'inspirait une force invincible. Il donnait tranquillement tous les ordres, pendant que le pilote était troublé. Je lui disais : Mon cher Mentor, pourquoi ai-je refusé de suivre vos conseils! ne suis-je pas malheureux d'avoir voulu me croire moi-même dans un âge où l'on n'a ni prévoyance de l'avenir, ni expérience du passé, ni modération pour ménager le présent! Oh! si jamais nous échappons de cette

revenge him, and to set your mother at liberty, to manifest your wisdom to the world, and to let all Greece see in you a king as worthy of reigning as veer was Ulysses himself.

These were salutary words; but I was not wise enough to listen to them; I listened only to my passions. The sage Mentor loved me so truly that he attended me in this rash voyage, which I undertook contrary to his counsel; and the Gods permitted me to commit a fault, that it might serve to cure me of my presumption.

Whilst Telemachus was speaking, Calypso gazed at Mentor. She was astonished, and fancied she perceived in him something divine; but could not clear up the confusion of her thoughts. She remained therefore full of fear and suspicion at the sight of this stranger, and was apprehensive lest her confusion should be discovered. Continue, said she to Telemachus, and satisfy my curiosity. Telemachus, thus resumed his story: For a long time we had a favourable wind for sailing to Sicily; but at last a thick tempest ravish'd the heavens from our eyes, and we were involved in profound darkness. By the flashes of lightning we discovered other ships exposed to the same peril, and soon found that they were Æneas's fleet; no less formidable to us than the rocks themselves. I now perceived, but too late, what the rash impetuosity of my youth had hindered me from considering with attention. Mentor appeared in this danger not only firm and intrepid, but more gay than usual. It was he who encouraged me, and I was sensible that he inspired me with an invincible fortitude. He gave out all orders with tranquillity: whilst the pilot was at a loss what to do. Dear Mentor, said I, why did I refuse to yield to your counsel? How wretched am I at having followed my own wishes at an age when one has neither foresight of the future, experience of the past, nor wisdom to govern the present! O! should we ever escape

tempête, je me défierai de moi-même comme de mon plus dangereux ennemi. C'est vous, Mentor, que je croirai toujours.

Mentor, en souriant, me répondit : Je n'ai garde de vous reprocher la faute que vous avez faite ; il suffit que vous la sentiez, et qu'elle vous serve une autre fois à être plus modéré dans vos désirs. Mais quand le péril sera passé, la présomption reviendra peut-être. Maintenant il faut se soutenir par le courage. Avant de se jeter dans le péril, il faut le prévoir et le craindre ; mais quand on y est, il ne reste plus qu'à le mépriser. Soyez donc le digne fils d'Ulysse ; montrez un cœur plus grand que tous les maux qui vous menacent.

La douceur et le courage du sage Mentor me charmèrent ; mais je fus encore bien plus surpris quand je vis avec quelle adresse il nous délivra des Troyens. Dans le moment où le ciel commençait à s'éclaircir, et où les Troyens, nous voyant de près, n'auraient pas manqué de nous reconnaître, il remarqua un de leurs vaisseaux qui était presque semblable au nôtre, et que la tempête avait écarté. La poupe en était couronnée de certaines fleurs : il se hâta de mettre sur notre poupe des couronnes de fleurs semblables ; il les attacha lui-même avec des bandelettes de la même couleur que celles des Troyens, il ordonna à tous nos rameurs de se baisser le plus qu'ils pourraient le long de leurs bancs pour n'être point reconnus des ennemis. En cet état, nous passâmes au milieu de leur flotte ; ils poussèrent des cris de joie en nous voyant, comme en revoyant des compagnons qu'ils avaient crus perdus. Nous fûmes même contraints par la violence de la mer d'aller assez long-temps avec eux : enfin nous demeurâmes un peu derrière ; et, pendant que les vents impétueux les poussaient vers l'Afrique, nous fîmes les derniers efforts pour aborder à force de rames sur la côte voisine de Sicile.

this tempest, I will mistrust myself as my most dangerous enemy: you, Mentor, shall always rule me.

Mentor replied with a smile: I am far from reproaching you with the fault you have committed; it suffices that you are sensible of it, and that it will teach you another time to curb your desires. But when the danger is over, your presumption perhaps will return. We must however now support ourselves with courage. Before we run into danger, we should foresee and apprehend it; but when once in it, we have only to despise it. Be therefore the worthy son of Ulysses, and manifest a courage superior to all the dangers that threaten you. Mentor's mildness and courage charmed me; but I was still more surprised, when I saw with what dexterity he delivered us from the Trojans. The moment the heavens began to clear, and the Trojans seeing us near must have known us, he observed one of their ships, which nearly resembled ours, and which had been separated by the storm. Its stern was crowned with particular flowers: he immediately placed garlands of the like flowers upon our stern; he tied them himself with ribbands of the same colour as those of the Trojans, and ordered all our rowers to stoop as close as possible to their benches, that they might not be known by the enemy. In this condition we passed through the midst of their fleet, they shouted for joy at seeing us, as if they had seen the companions whom they thought they had lost; we were even constrained, by the violence of the sea, to sail a long time with them. At last we staid a little behind; and whilst the impetuous winds drove them towards Africa, we made our utmost efforts to land by dint of rowing on the neighbouring coast of Sicily.

Nous y arrivâmes en effet. Mais ce que nous cherchions n'était guère moins funeste que la flotte qui nous faisait fuir : nous trouvâmes sur cette côte de Sicile d'autres Troyens ennemis des Grecs. C'était là que régnait le vieux Aceste, sorti de Troie. A peine fûmes-nous arrivés sur ce rivage que les habitans crurent que nous étions, ou d'autres peuples armés pour les surprendre, ou des étrangers qui venaient s'emparer de leurs terres. Ils brûlent notre vaisseau dans le premier emportement; ils égorgent tous nos compagnons; ils ne réservent que Mentor et moi pour nous présenter à Aceste, afin qu'il pût savoir de nous quels étaient nos desseins, et d'où nous venions. Nous entrons dans la ville, les mains liées derrière le dos; et notre mort n'était retardée que pour nous faire servir de spectacle à un peuple cruel, quand on saurait que nous étions Grecs.

On nous présenta d'abord à Aceste, qui, tenant son sceptre d'or en main, jugeait les peuples, et se préparait à un grand sacrifice. Il nous demanda, d'un ton sévère, quel était notre pays et le sujet de notre voyage. Mentor se hâta de répondre, et lui dit : Nous venons des côtes de la grande Hespérie, et notre patrie n'est pas loin de là. Ainsi il évita de dire que nous étions Grecs. Mais Aceste, sans l'écouter davantage, et nous prenant pour des étrangers qui cachaient leur dessein, ordonna qu'on nous envoyât dans une forêt voisine, où nous servirions en esclaves sous ceux qui gouvernaient ses troupeaux.

Cette condition me parut plus dure que la mort. Je m'écriai : O roi! faites-nous mourir plutôt que de nous traiter si indignement; sachez que je suis Télémaque, fils du sage Ulysse, roi des Ithaciens; je cherche mon père dans toutes les mers : si je ne puis le trouver, ni retourner dans ma patrie, ni éviter la servitude, ôtez-moi la vie, que je ne saurais supporter.

A peine eus-je prononcé ces mots que tout le peuple

We indeed arrived there; but what we sought was no less fatal than the fleet which occasioned our flight. We found on this coast of Sicily other Trojans, and consequently enemies of the Greeks. Here reigned old Acestes, who sprung from Troy. We had hardly reached the shore, when the inhabitants, supposing us either other people of the island who had taken arms to surprise them, or foreigners who came to seize their lands, burnt our vessel in the first transport of their rage, and murdered all our companions; reserving only Mentor and myself to present us to Acestes, that he might learn from us what were our designs, and from whence we came. We entered the city with our hands tied behind our backs, and our death was deferred only that we might serve as a sight to a cruel people, when they knew us to be Greeks.

We were immediately presented to Acestes, who, holding his golden sceptre in his hand, was administering justice among the people, and preparing for a grand sacrifice. He asked us, in a stern voice, of what country we were, and the cause of our voyage. Mentor immediately replied, and said: We come from the coast of great Hesperia, and our country is not far from thence. He thus avoided saying we were Greeks. But Acestes, without hearing more, and taking us for foreigners who concealed our design, ordered us to be sent into a neighbouring forest, to serve as slaves under those who tended his flocks. This condition appeared to me more intolerable than death. O king! cried I, put us to death rather than treat us thus unworthily; know that I am Telemachus, the son of the sage Ulysses, king of the Ithacans; I am seeking my father in every sea: if I can neither find him, nor return to my native country, nor avoid slavery, take from me a life which I cannot support.

I had hardly uttered these words, when all the people

ému s'écria qu'il fallait faire périr le fils de ce cruel Ulysse, dont les artifices avaient renversé la ville de Troie. O fils d'Ulysse! me dit Aceste, je ne puis refuser votre sang aux mânes de tant de Troyens que votre père a précipités sur les rivages du noir Cocyte : vous, et celui qui vous mène, vous périrez. En même temps un vieillard de la troupe proposa au roi de nous immoler sur le tombeau d'Anchise. Leur sang, disait-il, sera agréable à l'ombre de ce héros. Énée même, quand il saura un tel sacrifice, sera touché de voir combien vous aimez ce qu'il avait de plus cher au monde.

Tout le peuple applaudit à cette proposition, et on ne songea plus qu'à nous immoler. Déjà on nous menait sur le tombeau d'Anchise. On y avait dressé deux autels, où le feu sacré était allumé; le glaive qui devait nous percer était devant nos yeux; on nous avait couronnés de fleurs, et nulle compassion ne pouvait garantir notre vie : c'était fait de nous, quand Mentor demanda tranquillement à parler au roi. Il lui dit :

O Aceste! si le malheur du jeune Télémaque, qui n'a jamais porté les armes contre les Troyens, ne peut vous toucher, du moins que votre propre intérêt vous touche. La science que j'ai acquise des présages et de la volonté des dieux me fait connaître qu'avant que trois jours soient écoulés, vous serez attaqué par des peuples barbares qui viennent comme un torrent du haut des montagnes pour inonder votre ville et pour ravager tout votre pays. Hâtez-vous de les prévenir; mettez vos peuples sous les armes, et ne perdez pas un moment pour retirer au-dedans de vos murailles les riches troupeaux que vous avez dans la campagne. Si ma prédiction est fausse, vous serez libre de nous immoler dans trois jours; si au contraire elle est véritable, souvenez-vous qu'on ne doit pas ôter la vie à ceux de qui on la tient.

enraged cried out, that the son of the cruel Ulysses, who, by his artifices, had overthrown the city of Troy, be put to death. O son of Ulysses, said Acestes to me, I cannot refuse your blood to the manes of the many Trojans, whom your father has sent to the banks of black Cocytus; you, and he who conducts you, must die. At the same time an old man of the company advised the king to sacrifice us on the tomb of Anchises. Their blood, said he, will be grateful to the shade of that hero; Æneas himself, when he hears of such a sacrifice, will rejoice at this mark of your love for that which was dearest to him. All the people applauded this proposition, and only thought of sacrificing us. They were already leading us to the tomb of Anchises, and had erected two altars, on which the holy fire was kindled; the knife which was to slay us was before our eyes; we were crowned with flowers; no pity could save our lives; our fate was determined, when Mentor calmly desired leave to speak to tke king, and said to him:

O Acestes, if the misfortunes of the youthful Telemachus, who never bore arms against the Trojans, cannot move you, at least let your own interest move you. The knowledge I have obtained of the presages and the will of the Gods, inform me, that before three days are elapsed, you will be attacked by barbarous nations, who are coming like a torrent from the tops of the mountains to overflow your city, and to ravage your country. Make haste to prevent them: put your subjects under arms, and delay not a moment in driving within your walls the rich flocks and herds which you have in the fields. If my prediction is false, you will be at liberty to sacrifice us in three days; if on the contrary it is true, you will remember that you ought not to take away the life of those to whom you owe your own.

Aceste fut étonné de ces paroles, que Mentor lui disait avec une assurance qu'il n'avait jamais trouvée en aucun homme. Je vois bien, répondit-il, ô étranger, que les dieux, qui vous ont si mal partagé pour tous les dons de la fortune, vous ont accordé une sagesse qui est plus estimable que toutes les prospérités. En même temps il retarda le sacrifice, et donna avec diligence les ordres nécessaires pour prévenir l'attaque dont Mentor l'avait menacé. On ne voyait de tous côtés que des femmes tremblantes, des vieillards courbés, de petits enfans les larmes aux yeux, qui se retiraient dans la ville. Les bœufs mugissans et les brebis bêlantes venaient en foule, quittant les gras pâturages, et ne pouvant trouver assez d'étables pour être mis à couvert. C'étaient partout des cris confus de gens qui se poussaient les uns les autres, qui ne pouvaient s'entendre, qui prenaient dans ce trouble un inconnu pour leur ami, et qui couraient sans savoir où tendaient leurs pas. Mais les principaux de la ville, se croyant plus sages que les autres, s'imaginaient que Mentor était un imposteur qui avait fait une fausse prédiction pour sauver sa vie.

Avant la fin du troisième jour, pendant qu'ils étaient pleins de ces pensées, on vit sur le penchant des montagnes voisines un tourbillon de poussière; puis on aperçut une troupe innombrable de barbares armés : c'étaient les Himériens, peuples féroces, avec les nations qui habitent sur les monts Nébrodes et sur le sommet d'Acragas, où règne un hiver que les zéphyrs n'ont jamais adouci. Ceux qui avaient méprisé la prédiction de Mentor perdirent leurs esclaves et leurs troupeaux. Le roi dit à Mentor : J'oublie que vous êtes des Grecs; nos ennemis deviennent nos amis fidèles. Les dieux vous ont envoyés pour nous sauver : je n'attends pas moins de votre valeur que de la sagesse de vos conseils; hâtez-vous de nous secourir.

Acestes was astonished at these words, which Mentor pronounced with a confidence which he had never found in any man. I plainly perceive, O stranger, replied he, that the Gods who have alloted you so small a portion of the gifts of fortune, have given you a wisdom which is more valuable than the greatest prosperity. At the same time he put off the sacrifice, and immediately gave the orders necessary to prevent the attack, with which Mentor had threatened him. Nothing was to be seen on every side but trembling women, men bowed down with age, and little children with tears in their eyes, retiring into the city. Herds of lowing oxen and flocks of bleating sheep came in crowds, quitting their fat pastures, and unable to find stabling enough to receive them. In all parts there was a confused noise of men, who pressing upon could not understand each other, and who took in their tern a stranger for a friend, and running without knowing whither they were going. But the chiefs of the city, conceiving themselves wiser than the rest, imagined that Mentor was an impostor, who had made a false prediction to save his life.

Before the end of the third day, and whilst they were full of these thoughts, there was seen on the descent of the neighbouring mountains a curling cloud of dust; they then perceived an innumerable host of armed Barbarians. These were the Hymerians, a savage people, with the nations that inhabit the Nebrodian mountains and the top of Acragas, where a winter reigns, which was never softened by the zephyrs. Those who had despised Mentor's prediction, lost their slaves and their flocks. The king said to Mentor: I forget that you are Greeks; our enemies are become our faithful friends. The Gods have sent you to save us; I do not expect less from your valour than from the wisdo mof your counsels; make haste to succour us.

Mentor montre dans ses yeux une audace qui étonne les plus fiers combattans. Il prend un bouclier, un casque, une épée, une lance ; il range les soldats d'Aceste, il marche à leur tête, et s'avance en bon ordre contre les ennemis. Aceste, quoique plein de courage, ne peut, dans sa vieillesse, le suivre que de loin. Je le suis de plus près, mais je ne puis égaler sa valeur. Sa cuirasse ressemblait, dans le combat, à l'immortelle égide. La mort courait de rang en rang partout sous ses coups. Semblable à un lion de Numidie que la cruelle faim dévore, et qui entre dans un troupeau de faibles brebis, il déchire, il égorge, il nage dans le sang; et les bergers, loin de secourir le troupeau, fuient, tremblans, pour se dérober à sa fureur.

Ces barbares, qui espéraient de surprendre la ville, furent eux-mêmes surpris et déconcertés. Les sujets d'Aceste, animés par l'exemple et par les ordres de Mentor, eurent une vigueur dont ils ne se croyaient point capables. De ma lance je renversai le fils du roi de ce peuple ennemi. Il était de mon âge, mais il était plus grand que moi ; car ce peuple venait d'une race de géans qui étaient de la même origine que les cyclopes : il méprisait un ennemi aussi faible que moi. Mais, sans m'étonner de sa force prodigieuse ni de son air sauvage et brutal, je poussai ma lance contre sa poitrine, et je lui fis vomir, en expirant, des torrens d'un sang noir. Il pensa m'écraser dans sa chute ; le bruit de ses armes retentit jusques aux montagnes. Je pris ses dépouilles, et je revins trouver Aceste. Mentor ayant achevé de mettre les ennemis en désordre, les tailla en pièces, et poussa les fuyards jusque dans les forêts.

Un succès si inespéré fit regarder Mentor comme un homme chéri et inspiré des dieux. Aceste, touché de reconnaissance, nous avertit qu'il craignait tout pour nous, si les vaisseaux d'Enée revenaient en Sicile : il nous en donna un pour retourner sans retardement en notre pays,

Mentor discovers in his eyes an intrepidity which astonishes the fiercest warriors. He takes a buckler, a helmet, a sword and a lance; he marshals the soldiers of Acestes; he marches at their head, and advances in good order towards the enemy. Acestes, tho' full of courage, can only by reason of his age follow at a distance. I follow'd him closer, but could not equal his valour. In the battle his cuirass resembled the immortal Ægis. Death ran from rank to rank wherever his blows descended: like a Numidian lion, who, stung with hunger, falls on a flock of feeble sheep; he tears, he slays, he swims in blood, and the shepherds, instead of succouring the flock, fly trembling to escape his fury.

The Barbarians, who hoped to surprise the city, were themselves surprised and thrown into disorder. The subjects of Acestes, animated by Mentor's words and valour, felt a vigour of which they thought themselves incapable. With my lance I killed the son of the king; he was of my age, but was taller than I; for these people are descended from a race of giants of the same origine as the Cyclops. He despised so weak an adversary as me. But without being alarmed at his prodigious strength or savage and brutal air, I thrust my lance against his breast and made him as he expired vomit forth torrents of black blood. He had like to have crushed me in his fall. The clattering of his arms resounded in the mountains. I took the spoils, and returned to find Acestes. Mentor, having entirely routed the enemy, cut them in pieces, and pursued the fugitives even into the woods.

This unexpected success caused Mentor to be looked upon as a man beloved and inspired of the Gods. Acestes, touched with gratitude, told us, that he was in the greatest alarm, lest Æneas's fleet should return to Sicily. He gave us a ship to return without delay into our own country, loaded us with presents, and pressed us to depart, in order to

nous combla de présens, et nous pressa de partir pour prévenir tous les malheurs qu'il prévoyait; mais il ne voulut nous donner ni un pilote ni des rameurs de sa nation, de peur qu'ils ne fussent trop exposés sur les côtes de la Grèce. Il nous donna des marchands phéniciens, qui, étant en commerce avec tous les peuples du monde, n'avaient rien à craindre, et qui devaient ramener le vaisseau à Aceste, quand ils nous auraient laissés à Ithaque. Mais les dieux, qui se jouent des desseins des hommes, nous réservaient à d'autres dangers.

prevent the evils he foresaw. But he would give us neither a pilot or rowers of his own nation, for fear they should be exposed to some danger upon the coast of Greece. He gave us some Phœnician merchants, who, trading with all the nations of the world, had nothing to fear, and were to bring back the vessel to Acestes, when they had left us in Ithaca. But the Gods, who sport with the designs of men, reserved us for other misfortunes.

LE MINISTRE

DE WAKEFIELD.

PREMIÈRE PARTIE.

CHAPITRE I.

PORTRAIT DE LA FAMILLE DE WAKEFIELD : ON Y REMARQUE UNE MÊME PHYSIONOMIE DANS LES ESPRITS COMME DANS LES FIGURES.

J'ai toujours eu l'opinion que l'honnête homme qui se marie et qui élève une nombreuse famille, est plus utile que le célibataire qui se contente de parler population. D'après ce principe, à peine étais-je depuis un an dans les ordres, que je songeai sérieusement au mariage. Je me choisis une femme, comme elle-même se choisit une robe de noces, non pour le brillant, mais pour le bon user. Il faut lui rendre justice, elle était à citer pour son excellent naturel ; et quant à l'éducation, peu de dames campagnardes pouvaient se vanter d'en avoir une meilleure. Elle lisait assez couramment dans quelque livre anglais que ce fût, et personne ne la surpassait, tant pour la cuisine que pour l'art de confire et de conserver les fruits. Elle se piquait d'avoir des inventions admirables en fait d'économie domestique ; cependant je ne me suis jamais aperçu que nous en soyons devenus plus riches.

THE VICAR

OF

WAKEFIELD.

CHAP. I.

THE DESCRIPTION OF THE FAMILY OF WAKEFIELD; IN WHICH A KINDRED LIKENESS PREVAILS AS WELL OF MINDS AS OF PERSONS.

I was ever of opinion, that the honest man who married and brought up a large family, did more service than he who continued single, and only talked of population. From this motive, I had scarce taken orders a year, before I began to think seriously of matrimony, and chose my wife as she did her wedding gown, not for a fine glossy surface, but such qualities as would wear well. To do her justice, she was a good-natured notable woman; and as for breeding, there were few country ladies who could show more. She could read any English book without much spelling; but for pickling, preserving, and cookery, none could excel her. She prided herself, also, upon being an excellent contriver in housekeeping; though I could never find that we grew richer with all her contrivances.

Nous nous aimions tendrement, et notre affection s'accrut avec les années. Dans le fait, il n'y avait rien qui pût nous aigrir, ou l'un contre l'autre, ou contre qui que ce fût. Nous avions une maison élégante, située dans une belle campagne, et un voisinage agréable. L'année se passait en amusemens moraux ou champêtres, à rendre des visites à nos voisins riches, et à soulager ceux qui étaient pauvres. Nous n'avions ni révolutions à craindre, ni fatigues à essuyer; toutes nos aventures se passaient au coin du feu, et toutes nos transmigrations étaient de la chambre bleue à la brune.

Comme notre habitation était située près du grand chemin, le voyageur ou l'étranger venaient goûter souvent de notre vin de groseilles, pour lequel nous étions en grande réputation; et je proteste, avec la véracité d'un historien, que je n'ai jamais vu aucun de nos hôtes lui trouver le moindre défaut. Nos cousins, jusqu'au quatrième degré, se rappelaient tous leur généalogie sans le secours de l'art héraldique, et nous faisaient aussi des visites très-fréquentes. Quelques-uns ne nous honoraient pas grandement par leur prétention à notre parenté, car dans ce nombre se trouvaient le manchot, l'aveugle et le boiteux. Cependant ma femme soutenait toujours qu'*étant de la même chair et du même sang* que nous, ils devaient être assis à la même table; en sorte que si nous n'avions pas autour de nous des amis très-riches, nous en avions communément de très-contens; car c'est une remarque vraie dans la vie, que le convive le plus pauvre est aussi le plus sensible à la bonne réception; et comme il y a des gens qui s'extasient devant les couleurs d'une tulipe ou d'une aile de papillon, moi je suis, de ma nature, amateur passionné d'une face humaine bien gaie et bien épanouie. S'il arrivait que quelques-uns de ces parens là se trouvassent d'un

However, we loved each other tenderly, and our fondness increased as we grew old. There was, in fact, nothing that could make us angry with the world or each other. We had an elegant house, situated in a fine country, and a good neighbourhood. The year was spent in a moral or rural amusement; in visiting our rich neighbours, and relieving such as were poor. We had no revolutions to fear, nor fatigues to undergo; all our adventures were by the fire-side, and all our migrations from the blue bed to the brown.

As we lived near the road, we often had the traveller or stranger visit us, to taste our gooseberry wine, for which we had great reputation; and I profess, with the veracity of an historian, that I never knew one of them find fault with it. Our cousins too, even to the fortieth remove, all remembered their affinity, without any help from the Herald's Office, and came very frequently to see us. Some of them did us no great honor by these claims of kindred; as we had the blind, the maimed, and the halt amongst the number. However, my wife always insisted, that, as they were the same *flesh and blood*, they should sit with us at the same table. So that if we had not very rich, we generally had very happy friends about us; for this remark will hold good through life, that the poorer the guest, the better pleased he ever is with being treated; and as some men gaze with admiration at the colours of a tulip, or the wing of a butterfly, so I was by nature an admirer of happy human faces. However, when any one of our relations was found to be a

mauvais caractère, ou des hôtes importuns dont on voulût se débarrasser, j'avais soin, lorsqu'ils se séparaient de moi, de leur prêter ou une redingote, ou une paire de bottes, quelquefois même un cheval de peu de prix, et j'ai toujours eu la satisfaction de ne plus les revoir. De cette manière, j'écartais doucement de ma maison ceux qui me déplaisaient; mais on n'a jamais pu dire que la famille de Wakefield ait fermé sa porte au voyageur ou à l'indigent.

Nous vécûmes ainsi plusieurs années dans un état de bonheur parfait, non sans éprouver quelques-unes de ces petites contrariétés que la Providence envoie pour rehausser le prix de ses faveurs. Mon verger était souvent maraudé par les écoliers, et les gâteaux de ma femme volés par les chats ou par les enfans. Il arrivait que le seigneur de la paroisse s'endormait à l'endroit le plus pathétique de mon sermon, ou que sa femme, à l'église, répondait par une révérence écourtée aux politesses de la mienne. Mais nous nous consolions bientôt de ces sortes d'accidens; et ordinairement au bout de trois ou quatre jours nous étions tout surpris d'avoir pu nous en affecter.

Mes enfans, conçus dans la tempérance, et élevés sans mollesse, étaient sains et bien constitués : mes garçons étaient robustes et actifs, mes filles belles et brillantes de fraîcheur. Quand j'étais au milieu de ce petit cercle, qui promettait de devenir l'appui de ma vieillesse, je ne pouvais m'empêcher de répéter la fameuse histoire du comte Abens berg, qui, dans le temps que l'empereur Henri II visitait l'Allemagne, n'alla pas au-devant du prince avec ses trésors comme les autres courtisans, mais lui présenta ses trente-deux enfans comme le don le plus précieux qu'il pût lui faire. De même, quoique je n'en eusse que six, je les considérais comme un riche présent fait à mon pays, que j'estimais pour cela mon débiteur.

Notre aîné s'appelait *George*, du nom de son oncle, qui

person of a very bad character, a troublesome guest, or one we desired to get rid of, upon his leaving my house I ever took care to lend him a riding coat, or a pair of boots, or sometimes a horse of small value; and I always had the satisfaction of finding he never came back to return them. By this the house was cleared of such as we did not like; but never was the family of Wakefield known to turn the traveller or a poor dependant out of doors.

Thus we lived several years in a state of much happiness; not but that we sometimes had those little rubs which Providence sends to enhance the value of its favors. My orchard was often robbed by schoolboys, and my wife's custards plundered by the cats or the children. The Squire would sometimes fall asleep in the most pathetic parts of my sermon, or his lady return my wife's civilities at church with a mutilated curtsey. But we soon got over the uneasiness caused by such accidents, and usually in three or four days began to wonder how they vexed us.

My children, the offspring of temperance, as they were educated without softness, so they were at once well formed and healthy; my sons hardy and active, my daughters beautiful and blooming. When I stood in the midst of the little circle, which promised to be the supports of my declining age, I could not avoid repeating the famous story of Count Abensberg, who, in Henry II.'s progress through Germany, while other courtiers came with their treasures, brought his thirty-two children, and presented them to his sovereign as the most valuable offering he had to bestow. In this manner, though I had but six, I considered them as a very valuable present made to my country, and consequently looked upon it as my debtor. Our eldest son was named George, after his uncle, who left us

nous avait laissé dix mille livres sterling. Notre second enfant était une fille ; je voulais la nommer *Grissel*, comme sa tante; mais ma femme, qui, durant sa grossesse, avait lu des romans, insista pour qu'elle eût nom *Olivia*. En moins d'une année nous en eûmes une seconde, et pour le coup, j'avais bien mis dans ma tête que Grissel serait son nom ; mais une riche parente ayant pris fantaisie d'en être la marraine, lui donna celui de *Sophie*. Ainsi nous eûmes deux noms de roman dans la famille; mais je proteste solennellement que je n'y fus pour rien. Mosès fut notre quatrième ; et après un intervalle de douze ans, nous eûmes encore deux garçons.

Je dissimulerais en vain l'allégresse qui me transportait quand je voyais ma petite famille autour de moi; mais la vanité et la satisfaction de ma femme étaient plus grandes encore. Quand les personnes qui venaient nous voir s'avisaient de dire : D'honneur, mistriss Primrose, vous avez les plus beaux enfans de tout le pays. —Ah! voisin, répondait-elle, ils sont comme Dieu les a faits, assez beaux, s'ils sont assez bons; car, dit le proverbe, *beau est qui bien fait*. En même temps elle disait à ses filles de se tenir droites; et, à ne rien céler, elles étaient effectivement fort jolies. Le simple extérieur est si peu de chose à mes yeux, que je me souviendrais à peine de ces détails, si ce n'eût été dans le pays un sujet général de conversation. Olivia, qui avait alors environ dix-huit ans, avait cette fraîcheur de beauté, cette grâce vive, animée, frappante, que les peintres donnent à la jeune Hébé. Les traits de Sophie n'avaient pas tant d'éclat au premier coup d'œil; mais leur effet souvent était beaucoup plus sûr, car ils étaient doux, modestes, engageans. L'une triomphait du premier coup; l'autre, par des efforts habilement répétés.

En général il y a de l'analogie entre le caractère et la figure des femmes, du moins en était-il ainsi de mes filles.

ten thousand pounds. Our second child, a girl, I intended to call after her aunt Grissel; but my wife, who during her pregnancy had been reading romances, insisted on her being called Olivia. In less than another year, we had another daughter, and now I was determined that Grissel should be her name; but a rich relation taking a fancy to stand godmother, the girl was by her directions called Sophia : so that we had two romantic names in the family; but I solemnly protest I had no hand in it. Moses was our next; and after an interval of twelve years, we had two sons more.

It would be fruitless to deny my exultation when I saw my little ones about me; but the vanity and satisfaction of my wife were even greater than mine. When our visitors would say—"Well, upon my word, Mrs. Primrose, you have the finest children in the whole country,"—"Ay neighbourg," she would answer, "they are as heaven made them; handsome enough, if they be good enough; for handsome is that handsome does :" and then she would bid the girls hold up their heads; who, to conceal nothing, were certainly very handsome. Mere outside is so very trifling a circumstance with me, that I should have scarce remembered to mention it, had it not been a general topic of conversation in the country. Olivia, now about eighteen, had the luxuriancy of beauty with which painters generally draw Hebe ; open, sprightly, and commanding. Sophia's features were not so striking at first, but often did more certain execution; for they were soft, modest, and alluring. The one vanquished by a single blow, the other by efforts successfully repeated.

The temper of a woman is generally formed from the turn of her features; at least it was so with my daughters.

Olivia désirait d'asservir plusieurs amans, Sophie d'en fixer un seul; l'aînée laissait paraître quelquefois un trop grand désir de plaire, tandis que la cadette, dans la crainte d'exciter la jalousie, allait jusqu'à déguiser sa supériorité. La vivacité de l'une m'amusait quand j'étais gai, le bon sens de l'autre me plaisait quand j'étais sérieux. Mais ces différences n'étaient portées à l'excès ni dans l'une ni dans l'autre; et j'ai vu souvent mes filles changer d'humeur entre elles pendant un jour entier. Une robe de deuil faisait de ma coquette une prude, et une nouvelle parure de rubans suffisait pour donner à sa sœur cadette un air de vivacité qui ne lui était pas ordinaire.

George, mon fils aîné, que je destinais à l'une des professions savantes, fut élevé à l'université d'Oxford. Mosès, que je voulais livrer aux affaires, reçut à la maison une sorte d'éducation mixte. Mais il serait inutile de décrire plus en détail le caractère particulier de ces enfans, qui n'avaient que fort peu vu le monde. Au résumé il y avait dans tous une ressemblance de famille, et, à proprement parler, ils n'avaient qu'un seul caractère, celui d'être également généreux, crédules, simples et incapables d'offenser.

CHAPITRE II.

REVERS DE LA FAMILLE. LA PERTE DE LA FORTUNE NE FAIT QUE REHAUSSER LA DIGNITE DE L'HOMME VERTUEUX.

Le temporel de notre famille était confié principalement à l'administration de ma femme. Je distribuais aux orphelins et aux veuves du diocèse le produit annuel de mon bé-

Olivia wished for many lovers, Sophia to secure one: Olivia was often affected, from too great a desire to please; Sophia even repressed excellence, from her fears to offend: the one entertained me with her vivacity when I was gay, the other with her sense when I was serious. But these qualities were never carried to excess in either, and I have often seen them exchange characters for a whole day together. A suit of mourning has transformed my coquette into a prude, and a new set of ribands has given her youngest sister more than natural vivacity. My eldest son, George, was bred at Oxford, as I intended him for one of the learned professions. My second boy, Moses, whom I designed for business, received a sort of miscellaneous education at home. But it is needless to attempt describing the particular characters of young people that had seen but very little of the world: in short a family likeness prevailed through all, and, properly speaking, they had but one character; that of being all equally generous, credulous, simple and inoffensive.

CHAP. II.

FAMILY MISFORTUNES.—THE LOSS OF FORTUNE ONLY SERVES TO INCREASE THE PRIDE OF THE WORTHY.

The temporal concerns of our family were chiefly committed to my wife's management; as to the spiritual, I took them entirely under my own direction. The profits of

néfice, qui ne s'élevait qu'à trente-cinq livres sterling; car ayant par moi-même une fortune suffisante, je n'attachais nul prix au revenu de ma cure, et j'éprouvais un secret plaisir à faire mon devoir sans rétribution. J'avais pris aussi la résolution de me passer de vicaire, et de connaître personnellement tous mes paroissiens. J'exhortais les hommes mariés à la tempérance, et les garçons au mariage; de sorte qu'en peu d'années, il était passé en proverbe qu'il y avait à Wakefield trois choses étranges : un ministre sans orgueil, des jeunes gens sans amourettes, et des cabarets sans buveurs.

Le mariage a toujours été l'une de mes thèses favorites, et j'ai composé plusieurs sermons pour prouver la félicité de cet état. Mais il y a dans cette matière un article particulier que je m'étais fait un point capital de soutenir : je maintenais, avec Whiston, qu'il n'était pas permis à un prêtre de l'église anglicane, après la mort de sa première femme, d'en prendre une seconde; ou, pour exprimer la chose en un seul mot, j'étais, dans toute la force du terme, un zélé monogame.

J'avais été initié de bonne heure dans cette dispute importante, qui a laborieusementenfanté tant de volumes. Je publiai moi-même quelques Traités sur cette matière; et comme ils ne se sont jamais vendus, j'ai la consolation de penser qu'ils ne sont lus que du petit nombre des adeptes. Quelques-uns de mes amis appelaient cela mon côté faible; mais, hélas! ils n'en avaient pas fait, comme moi, l'objet d'une longue méditation. Plus j'y réfléchissais, plus le sujet me paraissait important. Je fis même un pas de plus que Whiston dans le développement de mes principes. Comme il avait fait graver sur la tombe de sa femme, qu'elle avait été la *seule* femme de William Whiston, je composai pour la mienne, quoique vivante encore, une épitaphe semblable, dans laquelle j'exaltais sa prudence, son économie, et

my living, which amounted to about thirty-five pounds a-year, I made over to the orphans and widows of the clergy of our diocese; for having a sufficient fortune of my own, I was careless of temporalities, and felt a secret pleasure in doing my duty without reward. I also set a resolution of keeping no curate, and of being acquainted with every man in the parish, exhorting the married men to temperance, and the bachelors to matrimony; so that in a few years it was a common saying, that there were three strange wants at Wakefield: a parson wanting pride, young men wanting wives, and alehouses wanting customers.

Matrimony was always one of my favourite topics, and I wrote several sermons to prove its happiness: but there was a peculiar tenet which I made a point of supporting: for I maintained with Whiston, that it was unlawful for a priest of the church of England, after the death of his first wife, to take a second: or, to express it in one word, I valued myself upon being a strict monogamist.

I was early initiated into this important dispute, on which so many laborious volumes have been written. I published some tracts upon the subject myself, which, as they never sold, I have the consolation of thinking are read only by the happy *few*. Some of my friends called this my weak side; but, alas! they had not like me made it the subject of long contemplation. The more I reflected upon it, the more important it appeared. I even went a step beyond Whiston in displaying my principles: as he had engraven upon his wife's tomb thad she was the *only* wife of William Whiston, so I wrote a similar epitaph for my wife, though still living, in which I extolled her prudence, economy, and obedience till death; and having got it copied fair, with an elegant frame, it was placed over

son obéissance jusqu'à la mort. Je la fis transcrire par une belle main, et encadrer avec élégance; puis je la plaçai à ma cheminée, où elle servait à plusieurs usages très-utiles : elle avertissait ma femme de ses devoirs et de ma fidélité ; elle lui inspirait le désir d'une bonne renommée, et entretenait dans son esprit le souvenir de sa fin.

Ce fut peut-être pour m'avoir entendu si souvent recommander le mariage, que mon fils aîné, à peine sorti du collége, fixa ses affections sur la fille d'un ecclésiastique du voisinage, qui était dignitaire et en état de la doter richement; mais la fortune était le moindre mérite de la jeune personne : tout le monde, excepté mes deux filles, convenait que miss Arabella Wilmot était extrêmement jolie. Sa jeunesse, son air de santé, son innocence, étaient rehaussés par un si beau teint et par des yeux si expressifs, que la vieillesse même ne pouvait la regarder avec indifférence. Comme M. Wilmot savait que j'étais en état de donner à mon fils un très-honnête établissement, il n'était pas éloigné de ce mariage; de sorte que les deux familles vivaient ensemble dans toute l'intimité qui a coutume de précéder une alliance presque arrangée. Convaincu par mon expérience que le temps de la recherche est le plus heureux de notre vie, je ne demandai pas mieux que d'en prolonger la durée; et les divers amusemens que le jeune couple trouvait dans la société l'un de l'autre, semblaient accroître leur amour. Nous étions ordinairement éveillés le matin par la musique ; ensuite, dans les beaux jours, nous faisions une partie de chasse à cheval. Les dames consacraient à la toilette et à l'étude l'intervalle qui se trouvait entre le déjeuner et le dîner; elles lisaient une page, puis couraient se regarder au miroir, qui souvent, de l'aveu du philosophe le plus austère, présentait alors une autre page de la plus grande beauté. A dîner, ma femme, assise au bout de la table, insistait pour couper les viandes elle-même, et

the chimney-piece, where it answered several very useful purposes: it admonished my wife of her duty to me, and my fidelity to her; it inspired her with a passion for fame, and constantly put her in mind of her end.

It was thus, perhaps, from hearing marriage so often recommended, that my eldest son, just upon leaving college, fixed his affections upon the daughter of a neighbouring clergyman, who was a dignitary in the church, and in circumstances to give her a large fortune: but fortune was her smallest accomplishment. Miss Arabella Wilmot was allowed by all, except my two daughters, to be completely pretty: her youth, health, and innocence, were still heightened by a complexion so transparent, and such a happy sensibility of look, as even age could not gaze on with indifference. As Mr. Wilmot knew that I could make a very handsome settlement on my son, he was not averse to the match; so both families lived together in all that harmony which generally precedes an expected alliance. Being convinced by experience, that the days of courtship are the most happy of our lives, I was willing enough to lengthen the period; and the various amusements which the young couple every day shared in each other's company, seemed to increase their passion. We were generally awaked in the morning by music, and on fine days rode a hunting. The hours between breakfast and dinner the ladies devoted to dress and study; they usually read a page, and then gazed at themselves in the glass, which even philosophers might own often presented the page of greatest beauty. At dinner my wife took the lead; for as she always insisted upon carving every thing herself, it being her mother's way, she gave us upon these occasions the history

servir; c'était, disait elle, l'usage de sa mère, et elle ne manquait pas de nous faire l'historique de chaque plat. Le repas fini, pour empêcher les dames de nous quitter, j'avais coutume de faire enlever la table; et souvent, avec l'aide du maître de musique, les jeunes personnes nous donnaient un très-agréable concert. La promenade, le thé, les contre-danses et de petits jeux, abrégeaient agréablement la journée sans le secours des cartes; car j'ai toujours eu de l'aversion pour toute espèce de jeu, excepté le trictrac, auquel mon vieil ami et moi risquions quelquefois nos douze sous. Je ne puis même, à ce sujet, m'empêcher de rapporter un événement de mauvais présage qui survint à la dernière partie que nous fîmes ensemble : je n'avais besoin, pour gagner, que du point de quatre, et j'amenai beset cinq fois de suite.

Quelques mois s'étant écoulés de cette manière, on jugea enfin convenable de fixer le jour des noces du jeune couple, qui paraissait le désirer avec impatience. Je n'ai pas besoin de décrire l'air important et affairé de ma femme pendant les préparatifs, ni les regards rusés de mes filles : toute mon attention était fixée sur un autre objet. J'achevais un traité que je me proposais de publier avant peu pour la défense de ma doctrine favorite. Comme cet ouvrage me paraissait un chef-d'œuvre de raisonnement et de style, je ne pus m'empêcher, dans la joie de mon cœur, de le communiquer à mon vieil ami M. Wilmot, et je ne doutai point qu'il ne m'en félicitât; mais je découvris trop tard qu'il tenait fortement à l'opinion contraire, et cela par une bonne raison; car à cette époque même il cherchait à se marier en quatrièmes noces. Cette circonstance produisit entre nous, comme on peut s'y attendre, une altercation très-aigre qui pouvait amener une rupture; mais nous convînmes de discuter le sujet à fond la veille du jour fixé pour le mariage.

of every dish. When we had dined, to prevent the ladies leaving us, I generally ordered the table to be removed; and sometimes, with the music-master's assistance, the girls would give us a very agreeable concert. Walking out, drinking tea, country-dances, and forfeits, shortened the rest of the day, without the assistance of cards, as I hated all manner of gaming, except backgammon, at which my old friend and I sometimes took a two-penny hit. Nor can I here pass over an ominous circumstance that happened the last time we played together: I only wanted to fling a *quatre*, and yet I threw *deuce-ace* five times running.

Some months were elapsed in this manner, till at last it was thought convenient to fix a day for the nuptials of the young couple, who seemed earnestly to desire it. During the preparations for the wedding, I need not describe the busy importance of my wife, nor the sly looks of my daughters: in fact, my attention was fixed on another subject—the completing a tract which I intended shortly to publish in defence of my favourite principle. As I looked upon this as a masterpiece, both for argument and style, I could not in the pride of my heart avoid showing it to my old friend Mr. Wilmot, as I made no doubt of receiving his approbation; but non till too late I discovered that he was most violently attached to the contrary opinion, and with good reason; for he was at that time actually courting a fourth wife. This, as may be expected, produced a dispute attended with some acrimony, which threatened to interrupt our intended alliance; but on the day before that appointed for the ceremony, we agreed to discuss the subject at large.

La dispute fut soutenue de part et d'autre avec une égale chaleur. Il prétendit que j'étais un hétérodoxe ; je rétorquai l'argument ; il répliqua, je persistai ; mais, au plus fort du débat, je fus appelé dehors par un de mes parens qui, avec une figure renversée, me conseilla de laisser là ma dispute, au moins jusqu'après le mariage de mon fils. Comment! m'écriai-je, abandonner la cause de la vérité ! laisser à cet homme la liberté de se remarier, quand je l'ai réduit *à l'absurde* et poussé dans ses derniers retranchemens ! Vous me persuaderiez moins aisément de renoncer à mes argumens qu'à ma fortune. — Votre fortune ! reprit mon ami, hélas ! je suis désolé de vous l'apprendre, elle est presque réduite à rien. Le négociant de Londres sur qui vous aviez placé vos fonds, vient de faire banqueroute et de disparaître, et on ne croit pas que les créanciers retirent cinq pour cent. Je ne voulais pas, avant que la noce fût finie, attrister votre famille et vous par cette fâcheuse nouvelle ; mais elle peut servir à modérer votre ardeur de dispute, car je suppose que votre prudence vous fera sentir la nécessité de dissimuler, au moins jusqu'à ce que la fortune de la jeune miss soit assurée à votre fils. — Si ce que vous me dites est vrai, répondis-je, et que je sois réduit à la mendicité, le malheur du moins ne me rendra jamais un malhonnête homme, et ne me fera point désavouer mes principes. Je vais de ce pas informer la compagnie de la situation où je me trouve ; et quant à dispute, je rétracte dès ce moment toutes les concessions que j'avais faites complaisamment à mon antagoniste, et je soutiens qu'il ne peut, *de jure*, ou *de facto*, quelque sens en un mot que l'on donne à cette expression, convoler à de nouvelles noces.

Je ne finirais pas si j'entreprenais de décrire les diverses sensations qu'éprouvèrent les deux familles à la nouvelle de notre désastre ; mais ce que les autres ressentaient ne paraissait rien, comparé au désespoir des deux amans. M. Wil-

It was managed with proper spirit on both sides: he asserted that I was heterodox; I retorted the charge; he replied, and I rejoined. In the mean time, while the controversy was hottest, I was called out by one of my relations, who, with a face of concern, advised me to give up the dispute, at least till my son's wedding was over.— " How, " cried I, " relinquish the cause of truth, and let him be a husband, already driven to the very verge of absurdity! You might as well advise me to give up my fortune as my argument. " " Your fortune, "returned my friend, " I am now sorry to inform you, is almost nothing. The merchant in town, in whose hands your money was lodged, has gone off, to avoid a statute of bankruptcy, and is thought not to have left a shilling in the pound. I was unwilling to shock you or the family with the account till after the wedding: but now it may serve to moderate your warmth in the argument; for, I suppose, your own prudence will enforce the necessity of dissembling, at least till your son has the young lady's fortune secure "— "Well, "returned I, " if what you tell me be true, and if I am to be a beggar, it shall never make me a rascal, or induce me to disavow my principles. I'll go this moment and inform the company of my circumstances; and as for the argument, I even here retract my former concessions in the old gentleman's favour, nor will I allow him now to be a husband, in any sense of the expression. "

It would be endless to describe the different sensations of both families when I divulged the news of our misfortune; but what others felt was slight to what the lovers appeared to endure. Mr. Wilmot, who seemed before

mot, qui déjà inclinait visiblement pour la rupture, y fut bientôt déterminé par cet événement. Il possédait une vertu au suprême degré : c'était celle de la prudence, la seule qui trop souvent nous reste à soixante-douze ans.

CHAP. III.

CHANGEMENT D'HABITATION. EN GÉNÉRAL, LE BONHEUR DE NOTRE VIE DÉPEND DÉFINITIVEMENT DE NOUS-MÊMES.

L'UNIQUE espoir qui nous restât alors était que la nouvelle de nos malheurs fut fausse ou prématurée; mais une lettre de mon correspondant de Londres m'en confirma bientôt toutes les particularités. La perte de ma fortune, si j'eusse été seul, ne m'eût paru qu'une bagatelle : toute mon inquiétude avait pour objet mes malheureux enfans qui allaient éprouver l'humiliation d'un état pour lequel ils n'avaient pas été élevés.

Près de quinze jours s'écoulèrent avant que j'entreprisse de modérer leur affliction ; car les consolations prématurées ne servent qu'à réveiller la douleur. Durant cet intervalle, j'employai toutes mes idées à chercher les moyens de soutenir ma famille. A la fin, on m'offrit une petite cure de quinze livres sterling à une résidence éloignée, où je pouvais, sans trouble, professer mes principes. Je l'acceptai avec joie, et je résolus d'accroître mon revenu par l'exploitation d'une petite ferme.

Ce plan arrêté, mon premier soin fut de rassembler les débris de ma fortune. Toute rentrée faite et toute dette

sufficiently inclined to break off the match, was by this blow soon determined: one virtue he had in perfection, which was prudence, too often the only one that is left us at seventy-two.

CHAP. III.

A MIGRATION. — THE FORTUNATE CIRCUMSTANCES OF OUR LIVES ARE GENERALLY FOUND AT LAST TO BE OF OUR OWN PROCURING.

The only hope of our family now was, that the report of our misfortunes might be malicious or premature; but a letter from my agent in town soon came with a confirmation of every particular. The loss of fortune to myself alone would have been trifling; the only uneasiness I felt was for my family, who were to be humble without an education to render them callous to contempt.

Near a fortnight had passed before I attempted to restrain their affliction; for premature consolation is but the remembrancer of sorrow. During this interval, my thoughts were employed on some future means of supporting them; and at last a small cure of fifteen pounds a year was offered me in a distant neighbourhood, where I could still enjoy my principles withont molestation. With this proposal I joyfully closed, having determined to increase my salary by managing a little farm.

Having taken this resolution, my next care was to get together the wrecks of my fortune; and all debts collected

payée, de quatorze mille livres sterling, il ne me resta que quatre cents livres. Ma principale attention fut donc de rabaisser l'orgueil de ma famille au niveau de sa nouvelle position; car je savais qu'une pauvreté ambitieuse est le comble du malheur. — Vous ne pouvez pas ignorer, mes enfans, leur disais-je, que toute notre prudence était insuffisante pour prévenir le revers que nous venons d'éprouver; mais elle peut beaucoup pour en adoucir les effets. Nous voilà pauvres, mes chers amis, et la sagesse nous fait une loi de nous conformer à notre humble situation. Abandonnons donc sans regret cette splendeur qui n'empêche pas tant de gens d'être misérables, et cherchons dans une condition plus modeste cette paix avec laquelle tout le monde est heureux. Les pauvres se passent très-bien de notre secours; pourquoi n'apprendrions-nous pas à nous passer du leur? Oui, mes enfans, abjurons dès ce moment toute prétention à des tons distingués. Il nous reste assez pour le bonheur, si nous sommes sages; tâchons de gagner en contentement ce que nous perdons en richesses.

Comme mon fils aîné avait fait ses études, je me décidai à l'envoyer à Londres, où il pouvait trouver dans ses talens des ressources, tant pour nous-mêmes que pour lui. La séparation d'amis et de parens est peut-être une des circonstances les plus accablantes qui suivent les revers de fortune. Le jour arriva bientôt où nous allions nous disperser pour la première fois. Mon fils, après avoir pris congé de sa mère et de ses frères et sœurs, qui l'embrassèrent en pleurant, vint me demander ma bénédiction. Je la lui donnai de bon cœur, et j'y ajoutai cinq guinées, qui étaient tout le patrimoine que j'eusse alors à lui offrir. Mon fils, lui dis-je, vous allez à Londres à pied, comme fit jadis le grand Hooker, l'un de nos ancêtres. Recevez de moi le même cheval que lui donna le bon évêque Jewel, c'est-à-dire, ce bâton; prenez aussi ce livre, il charmera l'ennui de

and paid, out of fourteen thousand pounds, we had but four hundred remaining. My chief attention, therefore, was now to bring down the pride of my family to their circumstances; for I well knew, that aspiring beggary is wretchedness itself. "You cannot be ignorant, my children," cried I, "that no prudence of ours could have prevented our late misfortune; but prudence may do much in disappointing its effects. We are now poor, my fondlings, and wisdom bids us conform to our humble situation. Let us then, without repining, give up those splendours with which numbers are wretched, and seek in humbler circumstances that peace with which all may be happy. The poor live pleasantly without our help; why then should not we learn to live without theirs? No, my children, let us from this moment give up all pretensions to gentility; we have still enough left for happiness, if we are wise, and let us draw upon content for the deficiencies of fortune."

As my eldest son was bred a scholar, I determined to send him to town, where his abilities might contribute to our support and his own. The separation of friends and families is, perhaps, one of the most distressful circumstances attendant on penury. The day soon arrived on which we were to disperse for the first time. My son, after taking leave of his mother and the rest, who mingled their tears with their kisses, came to ask a blessing from me. This I gave him from my heart, and which, added to five guineas, was all the patrimony I had now to bestow. "You are going, my boy," said I, "to London on foot, in the manner Hooker, your great ancestor, travelled there before you. Take from me the same horse that was given him by the good bishop Jewel, this staff,

votre route ; ces deux lignes qui s'y trouvent valent un million : *J'ai été jeune, et à présent je suis vieux ; cependant je n'ai jamais vu le juste abandonné, ni sa postérité réduite à mendier son pain.* Que ceci soit votre consolation durant le voyage. Va, mon cher enfant, quel que soit ton sort, viens me revoir une fois tous les ans. Bon courage et adieu. Comme il était plein d'honneur et de probité, je ne craignais point de le jeter nu sur le théâtre du monde; car je savais qu'élevé ou abattu, il y jouerait toujours le rôle d'un honnête homme.

Son départ n'était qu'un acheminement au nôtre qui arriva peu de jours après. Ce ne fut pas sans verser bien des larmes que nous quittâmes un voisinage où nous avions passé tant de jours paisibles; et le courage le plus ferme peut-il se défendre en pareille occasion de cette marque de sensibilité? D'ailleurs un voyage de soixante-dix milles pour une famille qui ne s'était jamais éloignée au-delà de dix, nous remplissait de craintes; et les gémissemens des pauvres, qui nous suivirent fort loin, augmentaient encore notre tristesse. Le premier jour nous conduisit sans accident à trente milles de notre future habitation, et nous nous arrêtâmes, pour passer la nuit, à une auberge mesquine, dans un village près de la route. Quand on nous eut donné une chambre, j'invitai l'hôte, suivant ma coutume, à souper avec nous; il y consentit d'autant plus volontiers que ce qu'il allait boire ne pouvait qu'augmenter la dépense. Il connaissait parfaitement le pays où j'allais m'établir, particulièrement M. Thornhill, mon futur seigneur, qui demeurait à quelques milles de là. Il me le dépeignit comme un gentilhomme qui n'aimait à connaître du monde que les plaisirs qu'il procure, et qui surtout se faisait remarquer par son attachement pour le beau sexe. Il nous assura qu'il n'y avait point de vertu qui pût tenir contre ses artifices et sa pertinacité, et qu'il n'y avait peut-être pas une fille de fer-

and take this book too, it will be your comfort on the way: these two lines in it are worth a million—*I have been young, and am now old; yet never saw I the righteous man forsaken, nor his seed begging their bread.* Let this be your consolation as you travel on. Go, my boy; whatever be thy fortune, let me see thee once a year; still keep a good heart, and farewell." As he was possessed of integrity and honour, I was under no apprehensions from throwing him naked into the amphitheatre of life; for I knew he would act a good part, whether vanquished or victorious.

His departure only prepared the way for our own, which arrived a few days afterwards. The leaving a neighbourhood in which we had enjoyed so many hours of tranquillity, was not without a tear, which scarce fortitude itself could suppress. Besides, a journey of seventy miles to a family that had hitherto never been above ten from home, filled us with apprehension, and the cries of the poor, who followed us for some miles, contributed to increase it. The first day's journey brought us in safety within thirty miles of our future retreat, and we put up for the night at an obscure inn in a village by the way. When we were shown a room, I desired the landlord, in my usual way, to let us have his company, with which he complied, as what he drank would increase the bill next morning. He knew, however, the whole neighbourbood to which I was removing, particularly Squire Thornhill, who was to be my landlord, and who lived within a few miles of the place. This gentleman he described as one who desired to know little more of the world than its pleasures, being particularly remarkable for his attachment to the fair sex. He observed, that no virtue was able to resist bis arts and assiduity, and that scarce a farmer's daughter within ten miles round but what had found him successful and faithless. Though this account gave me some pain, it had a very

mier à dix milles à la ronde qui ne l'eût rendu heureux et infidèle. Ce récit me fit quelque chagrin ; mais il produisit un effet tout différent sur mes filles, dont la figure semblait s'animer par l'espoir d'un triomphe prochain. Ma femme elle-même, pleine de confiance dans leurs attraits et dans leur vertu, ne paraissait pas moins satisfaite. Tandis que nous nous livrions à ces pensées diverses, l'hôtesse entra pour apprendre à son mari que ce monsieur si singulier qui était chez eux depuis deux jours, n'avait pas d'argent pour payer sa dépense. Pas d'argent! reprit l'hôte, cela est impossible ; car pas plus tard qu'hier, il paya trois guinées à notre bedeau pour sauver du fouet un vieux soldat estropié qui avait volé des chiens. L'hôtesse persistant dans ce qu'elle avait dit, il se mettait en devoir de sortir, jurant que de manière ou d'autre il serait payé, quand je le priai de me présenter à cet étranger que l'on dépeignait comme si charitable. Il satisfit à ma demande, et me fit voir un homme d'environ trente ans, vêtu d'un habit qui jadis avait été galonné. Il était de bonne mine, quoiqu'il eût l'air grave et austère d'un penseur. Il y avait quelque chose de bref et de sec dans sa manière de s'exprimer, et il semblait ne rien entendre au cérémonial, ou le dédaigner.

L'hôte s'étant retiré, je ne pus m'empêcher de témoigner à l'étranger la peine que je ressentais de voir un homme de sa sorte dans l'embarras où il se trouvait, et je lui offris ma bourse pour qu'il payât le maître de l'auberge. Je l'accepte de bon cœur, monsieur, répondit-il, et je suis bien aise que mon imprévoyance, qui m'a fait donner tout ce que j'avais d'argent sur moi, ait servi à me prouver qu'il existait encore parmi les hommes des cœurs bienfaisans. Mais avant tout, il est nécessaire que je connaisse la demeure et le nom de celui à qui je dois un tel service, afin que je m'acquitte envers lui le plus promptement possible. Je le satisfis pleinement en lui apprenant non-seulement mon nom et mes

different effect upon my daughters, whose features seemed to brighten with the expectation of an approaching triumph; nor was my wife less pleased and confident of their allurements and virtue. While our thoughts were thus employed, the hostess entered the room to inform her husband, that the strange gentlemau, who had been two days in the house, wanted money, and could not satisfy them for his reckoning. "Want money!" replied the host, "that must be impossible; for it was no later than yesterday he paid three guineas to our beadle to spare an old broken soldier that was to be whipped through the town for dog-stealing." The hostess, however, still persisting in her r st assertion, he was preparing to leave the room, swearing that he would be satisfied one way or another, when I begged the landlord would introduce me to a stranger of so much charity as he described. With this he complied, showing in a gentleman who seemed to be about thirty, dressed in clothes that once were laced. His person was well formed, and his face marked with the lines of thinking; he had something short and dry in his address, and seemed not to understand ceremony or to despise it. Upon the landlord's leaving the room, I could not avoid expressing my concern to the stranger at seeing a gentleman in such circumstances, and offered him my purse to satisfy the present demand. "I take it with all my heart, Sir," replied he, "and am glad that a late oversight in giving what money I had about me, has shown me that there are still some men like you. I must, however, previously entreat being informed of the name and residence of my benefactor, in order to repay him as soon as possible." In this I satisfied him fully, not only mentioning my name and late misfortune, but the place to which I was going to remove. "This," cried he, "happens still more lucky than I hoped for, as I am going the same way myself, having been detained

derniers malheurs, mais encore le lieu où j'allais fixer ma résidence. Ceci est plus heureux, reprit-il, que je n'aurais osé l'espérer, car je m'achemine précisément de ce côté-là; ce sont les grandes eaux qui m'ont retenu deux jours ici, mais j'espère que demain les routes seront praticables. Je lui témoignai le plaisir que me ferait sa compagnie. Ma femme et mes filles joignirent leurs instances aux miennes pour le retenir à souper, et il finit par se rendre. Sa conversation, à la fois instructive et agréable, me faisait désirer que l'après-souper se prolongeât; mais il fallut se retirer, et songer à prendre du repos pour soutenir les fatigues du lendemain.

Le jour suivant, nous partîmes le matin tous ensemble. La famille Primrose était à cheval pendant que M. Burchell, notre nouveau compagnon, marchait à pied dans le sentier qui bordait le chemin. Il observa en souriant que, comme nous étions mal montés, il était trop poli pour nous laisser derrière. Les eaux n'étant pas encore entièrement retirées, nous fûmes obligés de louer un guide qui trottait devant la caravane, dont M. Burchell et moi formions l'arrière-garde. Nous allégions les fatigues de la route par des dissertations philosophiques, matière qu'il paraissait entendre très-bien. Mais ce qui m'étonnait surtout, c'était de voir que, quoiqu'il fût mon débiteur, il soutenait ses opinions avec autant de ténacité que si j'eusse été le sien. Il m'apprenait aussi, chemin faisant, à qui appartenaient les différens domaines que nous découvrions sur la route. « Cette maison, me dit-il en me faisant voir à quelque distance un château magnifique, appartient à M. Thornhill, jeune homme qui jouit d'une grande fortune, quoique absolument dépendante de son oncle, sir William Thornhill. Cet oncle, qui se contente de peu pour lui-même, laisse son neveu disposer du reste, et réside presque continuellement à Londres. Quoi! repris-je, le jeune seigneur que je

here two days by the floods, which, I hope, by to-morrow will be found passable." I testified the pleasure I should have in his company, and my wife and daughters joining in entreaty, he was prevailed upon to stay supper. The stranger's conversation, which was at once pleasing and instructive, induced me to wish for a continuance of it; but it was now high time to retire, and take refreshment against the fatigues of the following day.

The next morning we all set forward together: my family on horseback, while Mr. Burchell, our new companion, walked along the foot-path by the road side, observing, with a smile, that as we were ill mounted, he would be too generous to attempt leaving us behind. As the floods were not yet subsided, we were obliged to hire a guide, who trotted on before, Mr. Burchell and I bringing up the rear. We lightened the fatigues of the road with philosophical disputes, which he seemed to understand perfectly. But what surprised me most was, that though he was a money-borrower, he defended his opinions with as much obstinacy as if he had been my patron. He now and then also informed me to whom the different seats belonged that lay in our view as we travelled the road. "That," cried he, pointing to a very magnificent house which stood at some distance, "belongs to Mr. Thornhill, a young gentleman who enjoys a large fortune, though entirely dependant on the will of his uncle, Sir William Thornhill, a gentleman, who, content with a little himself, permits his nephew to enjoy the rest; and chiefly resides in town." "What!" cried I, "is my young landlord then the nephew of a man whose virtues, generosity, and singularities

vais avoir serait le neveu d'un homme dont les vertus et les singularités sont si généralement connues ! J'ai entendu parler de sir William comme de l'homme le plus généreux et en même temps le plus original du royaume ; comme d'un homme d'une bienfaisance rare. — Oui, c'est assez là son portrait, dit M. Burchell ; peut-être même a-t-il trop de bienfaisance, du moins il l'a poussée à l'excès dans sa jeunesse ; car ses passions étaient vives, et comme elles étaient toutes tournées du côté de la vertu, elles l'ont jeté dans des excès romanesques. Il visa de bonne heure à acquérir les titres de brave militaire et de littérateur. En effet, il se distingua bientôt à l'armée, et ne fut pas sans réputation parmi les savans. L'adulation s'attache toujours aux ambitieux, ce sont de tous les hommes ceux qui sont le plus disposés à l'accueillir. Il était environné de gens qui ne se montraient constamment à lui que d'un seul côté, et qui développèrent en lui un sentiment si prononcé de bienveillance générale, qu'il oublia totalement le soin de ses intérêts. Il aimait tout le genre humain, parce que sa situation ne lui permettait pas de voir qu'il regorge de fripons. Les médecins nous parlent d'une maladie dans laquelle tout le corps devient d'une sensibilité si irritable, que le plus léger tact est douloureux. Ce que ces malades éprouvent au physique, ce gentilhomme l'éprouvait au moral. La plus légère infortune, réelle ou simulée, le touchait jusqu'au vif, et son ame était sans cesse tourmentée d'une sensibilité douloureuse pour les peines d'autrui. Ainsi disposé à secourir, on conjecture aisément que les solliciteurs ne lui manquaient pas. Ses profusions commencèrent à altérer sa fortune, mais non pas son bon naturel, qui, en vérité, semblait croître à mesure que le bien diminuait. Il devint plus imprévoyant en s'appauvrissant davantage : ses discours étaient d'un homme sensé, et ses actions d'un fou. Enfin, continuellement entouré d'importuns qu'il ne pouvait plus

are so universally known? I have heard Sir William Thornhill represented as one of the most generous, yet whimsical men in the kingdom; a man of consummate benevolence." — "Something, perhaps, too much so," replied Mr. Burchell, "at least he carried benevolence to an excess when young; for his passions were then strong, and as they all were upon the side of virtue, they led it up to a romantic extreme. He early began to aim at the qualifications of the scholar; was soon distinguished in the army, and had some reputation among men of learning. Adulation ever follows the ambitious; for such alone receive most pleasure from flattery. He was surrounded with crowds, who showed him only one side of their character; so that he began to lose a regard for private interest in universal sympathy. He loved all mankind; for fortune prevented him from knowing that there were rascals. Physicians tell us of a disorder in which the whole body is so exquisitely sensible, that the slightest touch gives pain: what some have thus suffered in their persons, this gentleman felt in his mind. The slightest distress, whether real or fictious, touched him to the quick, and his soul laboured under a sickly sensibility of the miseries of others. Thus disposed to relieve, it will be easily conjectured, he found numbers disposed to solicit: his profusions began to impair his fortune, but not his good-nature; that, indeed, was seen to increase as the other seemed to decay: he grew improvident as he grew poor, and though he talked like a man of sense, his actions were those of a fool. Still, however, being surrounded with importunity, and no longer able to satisfy every request that was made him, instead of *money* he gave *promises* — they were all he had to bestow, and he had not resolution enough to give any man pain by a denial. By this he drew round him crowds of dependants, whom he was sure to disappoint, yet wished to relieve.

satisfaire, il leur donna, au lieu d'argent, des promesses. C'était tout ce dont il pouvait disposer, et il n'avait pas le courage d'affliger personne par un refus. De cette manière, il amassa autour de lui une foule de demandeurs pour lesquels il n'avait plus qu'une bonne volonté stérile. Ces gens-là continuèrent pendant quelque temps à le harceler, et s'éloignèrent en l'accablant de justes reproches, et même de mépris. Mais à mesure qu'il perdit l'approbation des autres, il sentit aussi la sienne propre l'abandonner. Il avait appuyé sur l'adulation l'opinion qu'il s'était formée de lui-même; dès que ce support vint à lui manquer, il chercha vainement des consolations dans son cœur dont il n'avait jamais appris à respecter le suffrage. Le monde commença alors à prendre à ses yeux un aspect différent. La flatterie de ses complaisans dégénéra en une simple approbation, qui prit bientôt la forme de représentations amicales; et les représentations, lorsqu'elles sont rejetées, engendrent toujours de l'aigreur. Il reconnut alors que ces prétendus amis que les bienfaits attirent, ne sont nullement les plus estimables; il sentit que pour obtenir le cœur d'un autre, il faut lui donner le sien. Oh! oui, je reconnus bien alors...... Mais j'ai oublié ce que je voulais vous dire. Au résumé, monsieur, il résolut de s'occuper à l'avenir de lui-même, et se traça un plan pour rétablir sa fortune délabrée. Dans ce dessein, il parcourut à pied toute l'Europe à sa manière originale; et avant qu'il eût atteint sa trentième année, ses affaires se trouvèrent dans un état plus brillant que jamais. A présent, ses libéralités sont devenues plus raisonnables et plus modérées qu'autrefois; mais il n'a pas perdu ses bizarreries, et il a toujours une manière de faire du bien qui n'est pas celle de tout le monde. »

Mon attention était tellement captivée par le récit de M. Burchell, qu'à peine regardais-je devant moi en marchant, quand tout à coup nous fûmes alarmés par les cris

These hung upon him for a time, and left him with merited reproaches and contempt. But in proportion as he became contemptible to others, he became despicable to himself: his mind had leaned upon their adulation, and that support taken away, he could find no pleasure in the applause of his heart, which he had never learned to reverence. The world now began to wear a different aspect. The flattery of his friends began to dwindle into simple approbation; approbation soon took the more friendly form of advice, and advice, when rejected, produced their reproaches. He now, therefore, found that such friends as benefits had gathered round him, were little estimable: he now found, that a man's own heart must be ever given to gain that of another. I now found, that — that — I forget what I was going to observe: in short, Sir, he resolved to respect himself, and laid down a plan of restoring his falling fortune. For this purpose, in his own whimsical manner, he travelled through Europe on foot, and now, though he has scarce attained the age of thirty, his circumstances are more affluent than ever. At present his bounties are more rational and moderate than before; but still he preserves the character of an humorist, and finds most pleasure in eccentric virtues."

My attention was so much taken up by Mr. Burchell's account, that I scarce looked forward as we went along, till we were alarmed by the cries of my family, when turn-

de ma famille; et, en tournant la tête, je vis au milieu d'un courant rapide ma fille cadette, qui était tombée de cheval et qui se débattait contre le torrent. Deux fois je la vis enfoncer, sans qu'il fût en mon pouvoir de me dégager assez à temps pour lui porter secours; l'excès de mon saisissement me rendait d'ailleurs incapable d'agir; elle aurait certainement péri, si mon compagnon, voyant son péril, ne se fût plongé au même instant dans l'eau pour l'en retirer, et ce ne fut pas sans peine qu'il la conduisit saine et sauve à l'autre bord. Le reste de ma famille, en prenant un peu plus haut, passa le courant sans danger, et nous joignîmes alors nos remerciemens à ceux de ma fille. La reconnaissance qu'elle manifesta est plus aisée à imaginer qu'à décrire : elle remerciait son libérateur plus par ses regards que par ses paroles, et elle continuait à s'appuyer sur son bras, comme si elle eût aimé à recevoir de lui de nouveaux secours. Ma femme aussi espérait bien, disait-elle, avoir quelque jour le plaisir de reconnaître dans sa maison un tel service.

Après nous être reposés à la première auberge et y avoir dîné tous ensemble, nous nous séparâmes de M. Burchell, qui avait affaire d'un autre côté du canton, et nous continuâmes notre route. Ma femme protesta, chemin faisant, qu'elle aimait beaucoup M. Burchell, et que s'il avait assez de naissance et de fortune pour pouvoir prétendre à une alliance telle que la nôtre, elle ne connaissait point d'homme dont elle fît plus volontiers son gendre. Je ne pus m'empêcher de sourire d'un tel discours. Entendre une personne presque réduite à la mendicité, prendre ainsi le langage de la plus présomptueuse opulence, c'était assurément de quoi prêter matière aux moqueries des gens caustiques; mais pour moi je n'ai jamais désapprouvé ces illusions qui tendent à nous rendre plus heureux.

ing, I perceived my youngest daughter in the midst of a rapid stream, thrown from her horse, and struggling with the torrent. She had sunk twice, nor was it in my power to disengage myself in time to bring her relief. My sensations were even too violent to permit my attempting her rescue; she must have certainly perished, hat not my companion, perceiving her danger, instantly plunged in to her relief, and, with some difficulty, brought her in safety to the opposite shore. By taking the current a little farther up, the rest of the family got safely over; where we had an opportunity of joining our acknowledgments to hers. Her gratitude may be more readily imagined than described: she thanked her deliverer more with looks than words, and continued to lean upon his arm, as if still willing to receive assistance. My wife also hoped one day to have the pleasure of returning his kindness at her own house. Thus, after we were refreshed at the next inn, and had dined together, as Mr. Burchell was going to a different part of the country, he took leave, and we pursued our journey; my wife observing, as we went, that she liked him extremely, and protesting, that if he had birth and fortune to entitle him to match into such a family as ours, she knew no man she would sooner fix upon. I could not but smile to hear her talk in this lofty strain; but I was never much displeased with those harmless delusions that tend to make us more happy.

CHAPITRE IV.

OU IL EST PROUVÉ QUE LA FORTUNE LA PLUS HUMBLE PEUT PROCURER LE BONHEUR, QUI N'EST PAS HORS DE NOUS, MAIS DANS NOUS.

Le lieu de notre nouvelle habitation était un petit hameau composé de laboureurs qui cultivaient leurs propres terres, et qui étaient également étrangers à l'opulence et à la pauvreté. Comme ils trouvaient chez eux presque toutes les nécessités de la vie, ils allaient rarement chercher le superflu dans les villes. Eloignés du monde poli, ils conservaient la simplicité des mœurs antiques, et une longue habitude de la frugalité leur permettait à peine de savoir que la tempérance fût une vertu. Ils travaillaient gaiement les jours ouvrables, mais ils observaient soigneusement les fêtes comme des intervalles de repos et de plaisir. A Noël, ils chantaient des cantiques, s'envoyaient des nœuds d'amour à la Saint-Valentin, mangeaient des crêpes au Carnaval, déployaient leur esprit le premier d'avril, en faisant manger du poisson, et cassaient religieusement des noix la veille de la Saint-Michel. Instruits de notre approche, tous les habitans vinrent au-devant de leur pasteur, vêtus de leurs plus beaux habits, un fifre et un tambourin à leur tête. Ils avaient préparé pour nous recevoir un repas où nous prîmes joyeusement notre place, et ce qui manqua en esprit à la conversation fut suppléé par le rire et la gaieté.

Notre petite habitation était située au pied d'une colline; un beau bois l'abritait par derrière; sur le devant coulait un ruisseau; d'un côté nous avions une prairie, de l'autre une verte pelouse. Ma ferme consistait en vingt acres environ d'excellente terre, pour la cession desquels j'avais donné

CHAP. IV.

A PROOF THAT EVEN THE HUMBLEST FORTUNE MAY GRANT HAPPINESS, WHICH DEPENDS NOT ON CIRCUMSTANCES, BUT CONSTITUTION.

THE place of our retreat was in a little neighbourhood, consisting of farmers who tilled their own grounds, and were equal strangers to opulence and poverty. As they had almost all the conveniencies of life within themselves, they seldom visited towns or cities in search of superfluities. Remote from the polite, they still retained the primeval simplicity of manners; and frugal by habit, they scarce knew that temperance was a virtue. They wrought with cheerfulness on days of labour, but observed festivals as intervals of idleness and pleasure. They kept up the Christmas carol, sent true love-knots on Valentine-morning, eat pancakes on Shrovetide, showed their wit on the first of April, and religiously cracked nuts on Michaelmas-eve. Being apprised of our approach, the whole neighbourhood came out to meet their minister, dressed in their finest clothes, and preceded by a pipe and tabor; a feast also was provided for our reception, at which we sat cheerfully down; and what the conversation wanted in wit was made up in laughter.

Our little habitation was situated at the foot of a sloping hill, sheltered with a beautiful underwood behind, and a prattling river before; on one side a meadow, on the other a green. My farm consisted of about twenty acres of excellent land, having given a hundred pounds for my predeces-

cent livres sterling à mon prédécesseur, à titre de pot-de-vin. Rien ne pouvait surpasser la propreté de mes petites clôtures; les ormes et les haies dont elles étaient formées étaient de la plus grande beauté. Ma maison n'avait qu'un étage, et était couverte en chaume, ce qui lui donnait un air plus ramassé. Les murailles en dedans étaient proprement blanchies, et mes filles entreprirent de les orner de dessins de leur façon. La même pièce, à la vérité, nous servait de salon et de cuisine, mais elle n'en était que plus chaude. Elle était d'ailleurs si bien tenue, les plats et les assiettes étaient si nets, la batterie si bien récurée, et le tout rangé en si bon ordre sur des tablettes, que l'œil satisfait ne demandait pas de plus beaux ameublemens. Il y avait trois autres chambres, l'une pour ma femme et pour moi, une seconde à côté pour nos deux filles, et la troisième, à deux lits, pour le reste de mes enfans.

La petite république à laquelle je donnais des lois était réglée de la manière suivante. Au lever du soleil, nous nous rassemblions tous dans la chambre commune, où le feu avait été allumé auparavant par la servante. Après nous être salués mutuellement avec la cérémonie convenable (car j'ai toujours pensé qu'il était bon de conserver quelques formes extérieures de politesse, sans lesquelles la familiarité détruit l'affection), nous nous mettions tous à genoux pour remercier le Tout-Puissant du nouveau jour qu'il nous accordait. Ce devoir rempli, mon fils et moi nous allions vaquer dehors à nos travaux, tandis que ma femme et mes deux filles s'occupaient à préparer le déjeuner, qui était toujours servi à une heure fixe. J'accordais une demi-heure pour ce repas, et une heure pour le dîner; ce temps se passait en propos gais et innocens entre ma femme et mes filles, et en argumens philosophiques entre mon fils et moi.

Comme nous nous levions avec le soleil, nous ne pour-

sor's good-will. Nothing could exceed the neatness of my little inclosures, the elms and hedgerows appearing with inexpressible beauty. My house consisted of but one story, and was covered with thatch, which gave it an air of great snugness; the walls on the inside were nicely whitewashed, and my daughters undertook to adorn them with pictures of their own designing. Though the same room served us for parlour and kitchen, that only made it the *Warmer*. Besides, as it was kept with the utmost neatness, the dishes, plates, and coppers being well scoured, and all disposed in bright rows on the shelves, the eye was agreeably relieved, and did not want richer furniture. There were three others apartments, one for my wife and me, another for our two daughters, within our own, and the third, with two beds, for the rest of the children.

The little republic to which I gave laws was regulated in the following manner: by sunrise we all assembled in our common apartment, the fire being previously kindled by the servant. After we had saluted each other with proper ceremony—for I always thought fit to keep up some mechanical forms of good breeding, without which freedom ever destroys friendship—we all bent in gratitude to that Being who gave us another day. This duty being performed, my son and I went to pursue our usual industry abroad, while my wife and daughters employed themselves in providing breakfast, which was always ready at a certain time. I allowed half an hour for this meal, and an hour for dinner; which time was taken up in innocent mirth between my wife and daughters, and in philosophical arguments between my son and me.

As we rose with the sun, so we never pursued our la-

suivions jamais nos travaux après qu'il était couché; nous retournions alors au logis, où nous attendaient des visages épanouis, des cœurs contens et un bon feu. Parfois nous trouvions compagnie: le fermier Flambourough, notre babillard de voisin, et plus souvent un aveugle du lieu, qui jouait de la cornemuse, venaient nous rendre visite, et boire de notre vin de groseilles, dont nous n'avions perdu ni la recette ni la réputation. Ces bonnes gens avaient différens moyens de se rendre amusans; tandis que l'un jouait de sa cornemuse, l'autre chantait quelque ballade touchante, telle que *la dernière nuit de Johnny Armstrong*, ou *la cruauté de Barbara Alley*. Le jour se terminait comme nous l'avions commencé, les deux petits garçons étaient chargés de lire l'épître et l'évangile du jour; celui qui lisait le plus haut, le plus distinctement et le mieux, avait un sou le dimanche pour mettre dans le tronc des pauvres.

Quand ce venait le dimanche, c'était là le jour de parure, auquel tous mes édits somptuaires ne pouvaient rien. Quelque effet que je me fusse flatté de produire sur la vanité de mes filles par mes sermons contre l'orgueil, je les trouvais toujours attachées dans le cœur à leurs anciens colifichets; elles aimaient toujours les gazes, les dentelles, les grenats et les rubans: il n'était pas jusqu'à ma femme qui ne tînt à son pou-de-soie cramoisi, parce que je m'étais avisé de lui dire un jour qu'il lui allait bien.

Ce fut surtout le premier dimanche qui suivit notre arrivée, que leur conduite me mortifia beaucoup. J'avais recommandé la veille à mes filles d'être prêtes de bonne heure, car j'ai toujours aimé être arrivé à l'église bien avant mes paroissiens. Elles m'obéirent ponctuellement; mais quand il s'agit de se rassembler le matin pour déjeuner, je vis paraître ma femme et mes filles dans tout l'éclat de leur ancienne toilette, les cheveux mastiqués de poudre et de pommade, des mouches mises dans le dernier goût,

bour after it was gone down, but returned home to the expecting family, were smiling looks, a neat hearth, and pleasant fire, were prepared for our reception. Nor were we without guests: sometimes farmer Flamborough, our talkative neighbour, and often the blind piper, would pay us a visit, and taste our gooseberry wine, for the making of which we had lost neither the receipt nor the reputation. These harmless people had several ways of being good company; while one played, the other would sing some soothing ballad, Johnny Armstrong's Last Goodnight, or the cruelty of Barbara Allen. The night was concluded in the manner we began the morning, my youngest boys being appointed to read the lessons of the day, and he that read loudest, distinctest, and best was to have a halfpenny on Sunday to put into the poor's box.

When Sunday came, it was indeed a day of finery, which all my sumptuary edicts could not restrain. How well soever I fancied my lectures against pride had conquered the vanity of my daughters, yet I still found them secretly attached to all their former finery: they still loved laces, ribands, bugles and catgut; my wife herself retained a passion for her crimson paduasoy; because I formerly happened to say it became her.

The first Sunday, in particular, their behaviour served to mortify me: I had desired my girls the preceding night to be dressed early the next day; for I always loved to be at church a good while before the rest of the congregation. They punctually obeyed my directions; but when we were to assemble in the morning at breakfast, down came my wife and daughters, dressed out in all their former splen-

de longues queues retroussées et bouffantes, et qui faisaient *frou-frou* au moindre mouvement. Je ne pus m'empêcher de sourire en voyant leur vanité, surtout celle de ma femme, de qui j'attendais plus de raison. Le parti que je pris dans cette occasion fut d'ordonner à mon fils, d'un air important, d'appeler notre carrosse. Mes filles furent surprises à cet ordre, mais je le répétai avec plus de gravité encore. Sûrement, mon cher, vous badinez, dit ma femme, nous pouvons fort bien aller à l'église à pied, nous n'avons pas besoin de carrosse pour nous y conduire. — Vous vous trompez, lui dis-je, ma chère, il nous faut un carosse; car si nous allions à pied dans cet attirail, tous les petits enfans de la paroisse courraient après nous pour nous huer et nous montrer au doigt. — En vérité, reprit ma femme, j'avais toujours imaginé que mon cher Charles était bien aise de voir autour de lui ses enfans propres et bien mis. — Vous pouvez être aussi propres que vous voudrez, m'écriai-je en l'interrompant, et je ne vous en aimerai que mieux; mais tout ceci, ce n'est pas propreté, c'est extravagance. Ces manchettes, ces mouches, ces falbalas, ne serviront qu'à vous faire haïr des femmes de nos voisins. Oui, mes enfans, continuai-je d'un air plus grave, il faut retailler ces robes d'une manière plus simple; car cet étalage de parure sied mal à des gens qui ont à peine de quoi se mettre avec décence. Je ne sais pas même si ces longues queues et ces garnitures conviennent aux riches, quand on réfléchit qu'à calculer modérément, la nudité des pauvres pourrait être aisément couverte de tout ce superflu.

Ma remontrance fit effet. Elles allèrent à l'instant, d'un air fort tranquille, changer de toilette; et j'eus la satisfaction de voir le lendemain mes filles s'occuper d'elles-mêmes à diminuer l'ampleur de leurs robes, pour en faire des vestes de dimanche à Dick et à Bill, leurs deux petits frères. Ce qui me satisfit encore plus, ce fut de voir que leurs robes ainsi rétrécies, ne leur en seyaient que mieux.

dour; their hair plastered up with pomatum, their faces patched to taste, their trains bundled up into a heap behind, and rustling at every motion. I could not help smiling at their vanity, particularly that of my wife, from whom I expected more discretion. In this exigence, therefore, my only resource was to order my son, with an important air, to call our coach. The girls were amazed at the command; but I repeated it with more solemnity than before. "Surely, my dear, you jest," cried my wife; "we can walk it perfectly well: we want no coach to carry us now." "You mistake, child," returned I, "we do want a coach; for if we walk to church in this trim, the very children in the parish will hoot after us."—"Indeed," replied my wife, "I always imagined that my Charles was fond of seeing his children neat and handsome about him." —"You may be as neat as you please," interrupted I, "and I shall love you the better for it; but all this is not neatness, but frippery: these rufflings, and pinkings, and patchings, will only make us hated by all the wives of our neighbours. No, my children," continued I, more gravely, "those gowns may be altered into something of a plainer cut; for finery is very unbecoming in us, who want the means of decency. I do not know whether such flouncing and shredding is becoming even in the rich, if we consider, upon a moderate calculation, that the nakedness of the indigent world may be clothed from the trimmings of the vain."

This remonstrance had the proper effect; they went with great composure that very instant, to change their dress, and the next day I had the satisfaction of finding my daughters, at their own request, employed in cutting up their trains into Sunday waistcoats for Dick and Bill, the two little ones; and what was still more satisfactory, the gowns seemed improved by this curtailing.

LETTRES

ÉCRITES PENDANT L'AMBASSADE

DE

M. WORTLEY

A CONSTANTINOPLE.

LETTRE I.

A LA COMTESSE DE MAR.*

Rotterdam, 3 août 1716.

Je me flatte, ma chère sœur, vous causer quelque plaisir en vous faisant connaître que j'ai passé la mer sans accident, quoique nous ayons eu le malheur d'essuyer une tempête. Le capitaine du yacht nous avait persuadés de mettre à la voile pendant le calme, et il prétendait que rien n'était plus

* Lady Françoise Pierrepont, seconde fille d'Evelyn, premier duc de Kingston, épousa Jean Ereskine, comte de Mar, secrétaire pour l'Ecosse, en 1705, qui se joignit au prétendant en 1715, fut déclaré coupable en 1716, et mourut à Aix-la-Chapelle en 1732. George Ier accorda à lady Mar, sur les biens confisqués de son mari, le douaire auquel elle avait droit par son contrat de mariage, avec la faculté de le transmettre à sa fille lady Françoise Ereskine. Elle demeura pendant plusieurs années à Paris.

LETTERS

WRITTEN DURING

M. WORTLEY'S EMBASSY

AT

CONSTANTINOPLE.

LETTER I.

TO THE COUNTESS OF MAR.*

Rotterdam, Aug., 3, O. S. 1716.

I FLATTER myself, dear sister, that I shall give you some pleasure in letting you know that I have safely passed the sea, though we had the ill-fortune of a storm. We were persuaded by the captain of the yacht to set out in a calm, and he pretended there was nothing so easy as to tide it

* Lady Frances Pierrepont, second daughter of Evelyn, first Duke of Kingston, married John Ereskine, Earl of Mar, who was secretary of state for Scotland in 1705, joined the Pretender in 1715, was attainted in 1716, and died at Aix-la-Chapelle in 1732. George I. confirmed to Lady Mar the jointure on Lord Mar's forfeited estate, to which she was entitled by her marriage settlement, with remainder to her daughter, Lady Frances Ereskine. She resided many years at Paris.

facile que de le surmonter; mais après deux jours d'une navigation lente, le vent devint si fort qu'aucun des matelots ne pouvait se tenir debout; et nous fûmes rudement ballottés toute la nuit du dimanche. Je n'ai jamais vu d'homme plus effrayé que notre capitaine.

Pour moi, j'ai été si heureuse que je n'ai souffert ni de la peur ni du mal de mer; cependant, je l'avoue, j'étais si impatiente de me revoir sur la terre ferme que, ne voulant pas attendre que le yacht eût gagné Rotterdam, je me fis descendre dans la chaloupe à Helvoët-Sluys, où nous trouvâmes des voitures pour nous conduire à la Brille.

J'ai été charmée de la propreté de cette petite ville; mais mon arrivée à Rotterdam m'a offert une nouvelle occasion de plaisir. Les rues sont pavées avec de très-grandes pierres, et devant les portes, même de plusieurs des moindres artisans, il y a des bancs de marbre de diverses couleurs; tout cela est tenu si proprement, que je vous assure avoir parcouru hier presque toute la ville, incognito et en pantoufles, sans recevoir une seule éclaboussure. On voit les servantes hollandaises nettoyer avec plus de soin le pavé de la rue, que les nôtres n'en mettent à frotter une chambre à coucher. Cette ville paraît si peuplée d'habitans toujours en mouvement, et qui ont un air si affairé, que j'avais bien de la peine à m'imaginer que nous ne fussions pas arrivés un jour de foire; mais je m'aperçois que c'est tous les jours la même chose. Il est vrai qu'aucune ville ne peut être plus avantageusement située pour le commerce. Il y a sept larges canaux qui offrent aux négocians la facilité de faire débarquer leurs vaisseaux à la porte de leurs maisons. Les boutiques et les magasins sont d'une magnificence et d'une propreté surprenantes. Ils contiennent une grande quantité de belles marchandises, et à bien meilleur marché qu'en Angleterre; au point que j'ai beaucoup de peine à me persuader que j'en sois encore si

over: but, after two days slowly moving, the wind blew so hard that none of the sailors could keep their feet, and we were all Sunday night tossed very handsomely. I never saw a man more frightened than the captain.

For my part, I have been so lucky, neither to suffer from fear nor sea-sickness; though I confess I was so impatient to see myself once more upon dry land, that I would not stay till the yacht could get to Rotterdam, but went in the long-boat to Helvoetsluys, where we had voitures to carry us to the Brill.

I was charmed with the neatness of that little town, but my arrival at Rotterdam presented me a new scene of pleasure. All the streets are paved with broad stones, and before many of the meanest artificers' doors are placed seats of various-coloured marbles, so neatly kept, that, I assure you, I walked almost all over the town yesterday, *incognito*, in my slippers, without receiving one spot of dirt; and you may see the Dutch maids washing the pavement of the street with more application than ours do our bedchambers. The town seems so full of people, with such busy faces, all in motion, that I can hardly fancy it is not some celebrated fair; but I see it is every day the same. 'Tis certain no town can be more advantageously situated for commerce. Here are seven large canals, on which the merchants' ships come up to the very doors of their houses. The shops and warehouses are of a surprising neatness and magnificence, filled with an incredible quantity of fine merchandize, and so much cheaper than what we see in England, that I have much ado to persuade myself I am still so near it. Here is neither dirt nor beggary to be seen. One is not shocked with those loathsome cripples, so common in London, nor teazed with the importunity of idle fellows and wenches, that choose to be nasty and lazy.

près. On ne trouve ni boue ni mendians dans cette ville. La vue n'y est point offensée du spectacle dégoûtant de ces estropiés si communs à Londres; et l'on n'est point tourmenté par des troupes de fainéans importuns et de ces malheureuses vouées à la paresse et à la débauche. Les jeunes filles de boutiques, les simples servantes même, sont d'une propreté plus recherchée que certaines de nos grandes dames, et chaque femme se coiffant à sa fantaisie, cette grande variété de parures est un plaisir de plus quand on parcourt la ville.

Vous voyez, ma chère sœur, que jusqu'à présent je ne me plains pas; et, si j'aime toujours à voyager comme je l'aime actuellement, je ne me repentirai pas de mon projet. Je serai même long-temps satisfaite de l'avoir formé, s'il me fournit l'occasion de vous récréer. Mais ce n'est pas de Hollande que vous devez espérer une offre désintéressée. Je connais assez le style de Rotterdam, pour vous dire franchement, en un mot, que j'attends de vous en retour toutes les nouvelles de Londres. Vous voyez que j'ai déjà appris à faire un bon marché, et que ce n'est pas pour rien que j'aime à vous dire que je suis votre affectionnée sœur.

II. A MADAME SKERRET*.

Je me hâte de vous apprendre, ma chère dame, que, malgré toutes les fatigues dont vous m'aviez menacée, je

* Dans la suite, seconde femme de Robert, premier comte d'Orford.

The common servants and little shop-women here, are more nicely clean than most of our ladies; aud the great variety of neat dresses (every woman dressing her head after her own fashion) is an additional pleasure in seeing the town.

You see, hitherto, dear sister, I make no complaints; and, if I continue to like travelling as well as I do at present, I shall not repent my project. It will go a great way in making me satisfied with it, if it affords me an opportunity of entertaining you. But it is not from Holland that you may expect a desinterested offer. I can write enough in the style of Rotterdam to tell you plainly, in one word, that I expect returns of all the London news. You see I have already learnt to make a good bargain; and that it is not for nothing I will so much as tell you I am your affectionate sister.

II. TO MRS. SKERRET.*

Hague, Aug. 5, O, S. 1716.

I make haste to tell you, dear madam, that after all the dreadful fatigues you threatened me with, I am hitherto

* Afterward the second wife of Robert, first Earl of Orford.

suis, jusqu'à présent, très-contente de mon voyage. Nous avons soin de marcher à si petites journées, que je me crois plutôt en partie de plaisir qu'en route; et certes rien ne peut être plus agréable que de voyager en Hollande. Toute la campagne ressemble à un vaste jardin; les chemins sont bien pavés; ils sont ombragés de chaque côté par de belles rangées d'arbres, et bordés de grands canaux couverts de barques, qui se croisent continuellement. On ne peut faire vingt pas sans voir quelque maison de plaisance; on n'est pas quatre heures sans rencontrer quelque grande ville d'une propreté si singulière, que je ne doute pas que vous n'en fussiez dans l'admiration. L'endroit où je suis dans ce moment est, sans contredit, un des plus beaux villages de l'univers. Il renferme plusieurs places, dont les maisons sont bien bâties; et, ce que je regarde comme une beauté particulière, toutes sont plantées de grands arbres touffus. Le *Voor-Hout* est à la fois l'*Hyde-Parc* et le Mail pour les gens de qualité; car c'est là qu'on vient respirer l'air, soit à pied, soit en voiture. On y trouve des boutiques où l'on vend des gaufres, des rafraîchissemens, etc.

J'ai été voir plusieurs des jardins les plus célèbres, mais je ne vous ennuierai pas de leur description; je crains que vous ne trouviez déjà ma lettre assez longue. Je ne la terminerai pas cependant sans vous demander pardon de n'avoir pas rempli vos désirs en vous envoyant la dentelle que vous m'aviez demandée. Je vous assure qu'on ne pourrait en trouver ici de moins chère qu'à Londres. Si vous voulez quelques marchandises des Indes, il y en a une grande variété à très-bas prix, et ce sera avec le plus grand plaisir et la plus grande exactitude que j'exécuterai vos ordres. Je suis, ma chère dame, etc.

---

very well pleased with my journey. We take care to make such short stages every day, that I rather fancy myself upon parties of pleasure than upon the road; and sure nothing can be more agreeable than travelling in Holland. The whole country appears a large garden; the roads are well paved, shaded on each side with rows of trees, and bordered with large canals, full of boats, passing and repassing. Every twenty paces gives you the prospect of some villa, and every four hours that of a large town, so surprisingly neat, I am sure you would be charmed with them. The place I am now at is certainly one of the finest villages in the world. Here are several squares finely built, and (what I think a particular beauty) the whole set with thick large trees. The *Voorhout* is, at the same time, the Hyde-Park and Mall of the people of quality; for they take the air in it both on foot and in coaches. There are shops for wafers, cool liquors, etc.

I have been to see several of the most celebrated gardens, but I will not teaze you with their descriptions. I dare say you think my letter already long enough. But I must not conclude without begging your pardon for not obeying your commands in sending the lace you ordered me. Upon my word, I can yet find none that is not dearer than you may buy it at London. If you want any India goods, here are great variety of pennyworths; and I shall follow your orders with great pleasure and exactness, being,

Dear Madam, etc., etc.

III. A MADAME S. C....

Nimègue, 13 août 1716.

Je suis extrêmement fâchée, ma chère S. C., que la crainte de désobliger vos parens, et celle qu'ils ont témoignée pour votre santé et pour votre sûreté, m'aient ravi le bonheur de jouir de votre compagnie, et vous aient privée du plaisir d'un voyage agréable. J'éprouve une espèce de sensation pénible à chaque objet nouveau, à chaque vue délicieuse, lorsque je pense que vous ne pouvez malheureusement pas goûter le plaisir qu'ils vous auraient procuré.

Si vous étiez ici avec moi, vous seriez prête à recevoir les visites de vos amies de Nottingham. Jamais deux endroits ne se ressemblèrent davantage; il ne s'agit que de donner à la Meuse le nom de Trent, et il sera impossible de distinguer l'un de l'autre. Les maisons sont, comme celles de Nottingham, en amphithéâtre et entremêlées d'arbres et de jardins. La tour, qui porte le nom de Jules-César, est située comme le château de Nottingham; je ne peux m'empêcher de croire que je vois devant moi Trent-Field, Adboulton, et autres lieux qui nous sont si connus. Il est vrai que les fortifications font une grande différence. Tous les hommes instruits dans l'art de la guerre estiment beaucoup celles de Nimègue; quant à moi, qui ne m'y connais point du tout, je me contenterai de vous dire qu'il y a une belle promenade sur les remparts, dont une des tours est très-bien nommée le belvéder; qu'on y vient prendre du café, du thé, etc., et que l'on y jouit d'une des plus belles vues du monde. Les promenades publiques ne sont pas belles; mais l'ombrage épais de leurs grands arbres a quelque chose de respectable et de délicieux. Je ne dois pas

III. TO MRS. S. C.

Nimeguen, Aug., 13, O. S. 1716.

I am extremely sorry, my dear S. that your fears of disobliging your relations, and their fears for your health and safety, have hindered me from enjoying the happiness of your company, and you the pleasure of a diverting journey. I receive some degree of mortification from every agreeable novelty, or pleasing prospect, by the reflection of your having so unluckily missed the delight which I know it would have given you.

If you were with me in this town, you would be ready to expect to receive visits from your Nottingham friends. No two places were ever more resembling; one has but to give the Maese the name of the Trent, and there is no distinguishing the prospect. The houses, like those of Nottingham, are built one above another, and are intermixed in the same manner with trees and gardens. The tower they call Julius Cæsar's has the same situation with Nottingham castle; and I cannot help fancying I see from it the Trent-field, Adboulton, etc. places so well known to us. 'Tis true, the fortifications make a considerable difference. All the learned in the art of war bestow great commendations on them; for my part, that know nothing of the matter, I shall content myself with telling you, 'tis a very pretty walk on the ramparts, on which there is a tower, very deservedly called the Belvidere; where people go to drink coffee, tea, etc. and enjoy one of the finest prospects in the world. The public walks have no great beauty, but the thick shade of the trees, which is solemnly delightful. But I must not

oublier non plus de parler du pont, qui m'a paru surprenant. Il est assez vaste pour contenir plusieurs centaines d'hommes avec des chevaux et des équipages. On paie la valeur de deux sous anglais, pour droit de passage. Le pont et les passans partent à la fois, et l'on se trouve de l'autre côté de la rivière sans s'en apercevoir, tant le mouvement de ce pont ambulant est insensible.

Je suis allée hier à l'église française, et j'ai été bien étonnée de la manière dont l'office s'y fait. Le ministre, qui occupait la première place, portait une espèce de chapeau à larges bords; ce qui lui donnait absolument l'air d'un de ces gilles de la foire de Saint-Barthélemy, que ne démentaient point ses gestes antiques et bizarres, en prêchant comme ceux-ci parlent à leurs marionnettes. Cependant l'assemblée paraissait l'écouter avec beaucoup de recueillement, et quelques-uns de ces auditeurs m'ont dit que cet ecclésiastique jouissait parmi eux d'une grande considération. Je crois que vous êtes déjà aussi fatiguée du récit que je vous en fais, que je l'ai été de son sermon; mais je suis persuadée que votre frère excusera cette digression en faveur de l'église anglicane. Dire du mal des calvinistes, c'est, vous le savez, faire l'éloge de notre église. Adieu, ma chère S., pensez toujours à moi, et soyez assurée que je ne vous oublierai jamais.

forget to take notice of the bridge, which appeared very surprising to me. It is large enough to hold hundreds of men, with horses and carriages. They give the value of an English two-pence to get upon it, and then away they go, bridge and all, to the other side of the river, with so slow a motion, one is hardly sensible of any at all.

I was yesterday at the French church, and stared very much at their manner of service. The parson clapped on a broad-brimmed hat in the first place, which gave him entirely the air of *what-d'ye-call-him*, in Bartholomew-fair, which he kept up by extraordinary antic gestures, and preaching much such stuff as the other talked to the puppets. However, the congregation seemed to receive it with great devotion; and I was informed by some of his flock that he is a person of particular fame amongst them. I believe, by this time, you are as much tired with my account of him, as I was with his sermon; but I am sure your brother will excuse a digression in favour of the church of England. You know speaking disrespectfully of the Calvinists, is the same thing as speaking honourably of the Church. Adieu, my dear S. Always remember me; and be assured I can never forget you, etc.

IV. A LADY RICH.*

Cologne, 16 août 1716.

Si milady Rich pouvait se faire une idée des fatigues que j'ai essuyées depuis deux jours, elle regarderait sans doute comme une bien grande preuve de ma considération pour elle l'empressement que je mets à lui écrire aujourd'hui. Nous sommes venus de Nimègue ici avec des chevaux de louage, parce qu'il n'y a pas de poste sur cette route; notre première pause a été à Reinberg, où nous n'avons trouvé qu'un assez mauvais logement; mais ce n'était rien au prix de ce que j'ai souffert hier. Nous espérions gagner Cologne; nos chevaux se trouvèrent si fatigués à Stamel, qui en est à trois heures de chemin, que je fus forcée d'y passer la nuit, sans me coucher, dans une chambre qui ne valait pas mieux qu'un hangar; car quoique j'eussé mon lit avec moi, je ne voulus pas me déshabiller dans un endroit où le vent soufflait de tous côtés. Nous avons quitté ce lieu désagréable à la pointe du jour, et ce matin, vers six heures, nous sommes arrivés ici sans accident; je me suis couchée sur-le-champ, et j'ai si bien dormi pendant trois heures, que je me suis sentie parfaitement remise, et assez de courage pour aller voir tout ce qu'il y a de curieux dans cette ville, c'est-à-dire les églises; car il n'y a rien autre chose qui mérite d'être vu.

Cologne est une très-grande ville, mais dont la majeure partie est anciennement bâtie. L'église des jésuites est la plus propre; elle m'a été montrée, avec beaucoup de

* Lady Rich était femme de Sir Robert Rich, baronet de Londres. Elle était fille du colonel Griffin, et était attachée à la personne de la princesse de Galles, depuis la reine Caroline.

IV. TO THE LADY RICH.*

Cologn, Aug., O. S. 1716.

If my Lady Rich could have any notion of the fatigues that I have suffered these two last days, I am sure she would own it a great proof of regard that I now sit down to write to her. We hired horses from Nimeguen hither, not having the conveniency of the post, and found but very indifferent accommodations at Reinberg, our first stage; but that was nothing to what I suffered yesterday. We were in hopes to reach Cologn: our horses tired at Stamel, three hours from it, where I was forced to pass the night in my clothes, in a room not at all better than a hovel; for though I have my own bed with me, I had no mind to undress vhere the wind came from a thousand places. We left this wretched lodging at day-break, and about six this morning came safe here, where I got immediately into bed. I slept so well for three hours, that I found myself perfectly recovered, and have had spirits enough to go and see all that is curious in the town, that is to say, the churches, for here is nothing else worth seeing.

This is a very large town, but the most part of it is old built. The Jesuits' church is the neatest, which was shewed me, in a very complaisant manner, by a handsome young

* Lady Rich was the wife of Sir Robert Rich, Bart, of London. She was a daughter of colonel Griffin, and had an appointment about the person of the princess of Wales, afterwards Queen Caroline.

complaisance, par un jeune jésuite d'une agréable physionomie, qui, ne sachant pas qui j'étais, mit dans ses complimens et ses plaisanteries une liberté qui me divertit beaucoup. N'ayant jamais rien vu de cette nature, je ne me lassais point d'admirer la magnificenee des autels, la richesse des statues des saints, toutes d'argent massif, et les châsses contenant des reliques; cependant je ne pouvais m'empêcher de murmurer tout bas sur cette profusion de perles, de diamans et de rubis employés à décorer des dents pourries et de sales chiffons. J'avoue même que j'ai eu assez de perversité pour convoiter le collier de perles de sainte Ursule, quoiqu'il n'y en eût peut-être pas du tout, une statue n'étant certainement pas notre prochain; mais j'ai été encore plus loin, j'ai désiré qu'elle fût elle-même changée en vaisselle. J'aurais voulu aussi voir fondre un grand saint Christophe qui, selon moi, figurerait bien en cuvette d'argent.

Telles étaient mes pieuses réflexions. J'ai pourtant été très-glorieuse, pour notre nation, de voir entassés les crânes des onze mille vierges. J'ai vu encore quelques centaines de reliques non moins célèbres; mais je n'imiterai point la manière d'écrire ordinaire des voyageurs, jusqu'à vous en donner la liste, bien persuadée que vous n'avez pas la moindre curiosité de connaître les noms donnés à des mâchoires et à des morceaux de bois vermoulus. Adieu, je vais souper, et je boirai à votre santé avec de l'excellent vin de Lorraine, qui, j'en suis sûre, est le même que celui que vous appelez vin de Bourgogne à Londres, etc., etc.

Jesuit; who, not knowing who I was, took a liberty in his compliments and railleries, which very much diverted me. Having never before seen any thing of that nature, I could not enough admire the magnificence of the altars, the rich images of the saints, (all of massy silver,) and the enchassures of the relics; though I could not help murmuring, in my heart, at the profusion of pearls, diamonds, and rubies, bestowed in the adornment of rotten teeth and dirty rags. I own that I had wickedness enough to covet St. Ursula's pearl necklaces; though perhaps this was no wickedness at all, an image not being certainly one's neighbour; but I went yet farther, and wished she herself converted into dressing plate. I should also gladly see converted into silver a great St. Christopher, which I imagine would look very well in a cistern.

These were my pious reflections: though I was very well satisfied to see, piled up to the honour of our nation, the skulls of the eleven thousand virgins. I have seen some hundreds of relics here of no less consequence; but I will not imitate the common style of travellers so far as to give you a list of them, being persuaded that you have no manner of curiosity for the titles given to jaw-bones and bits of worm-eaten wood.—Adieu, I am just going to supper, where I shall drink your health in an admirable sort of Lorrain wine, which I am sure is the same you call Burgundy in London, etc., etc.

ESSAI

SUR L'HOMME.

ÉPITRE I.

Allons, mon cher St-Jean, laissons tous les petits objets à la basse ambition et à l'orgueil des rois, et puisque la vie se borne à regarder ce qui nous environne et à mourir, parcourons donc au moins cette scène de l'homme : prodigieux labyrinthe, mais qui ne manque pas de régularité; campagne où croissent confondus les fleurs et les chardons; jardin qui tente par des fruits défendus. Parcourons ensemble cette vaste plaine, et voyons ce qu'elle découvre ou ce qu'elle tient caché. Entrons dans les routes les plus secrètes; montons aux points les plus élevés; et remarquons également ce qui rampe inaperçu, et ce qui se perd dans l'élévation. Examinons la marche de la nature : atteignons la folie dans sa course, et saisissons les mœurs dans leur naissance. Rions quand il le faut; montrons de la candeur lorsque c'est possible : mais justifions aux hommes les voies de Dieu.

I. D'abord pour raisonner de Dieu là-haut, ou de l'homme ici-bas, comment le faire autrement que d'après nos propres connaissances? Et nous ne connaissons de l'homme que son séjour sur la terre : c'est d'où partent et où aboutissent tous nos raisonnemens. Quoique Dieu

ESSAY

ON MAN.

EPISTLE I.

AWAKE, my ST. JOHN! leave all meaner things
To low ambition, and the pride of Kings.
Let us (since Life can little more supply
Than just to look about us, and to die)
Expatiate free o'er all this scene of Man;
A mighty Maze! but not without a plan;
A Wild, where weeds and flow'rs promiscuous shoot;
Or Garden, tempting with forbidden fruit.
Together let us beat this ample field,
Try what the open, what the covert yield;
The latent tracts, the giddy heights explore
Of all who blindly creep, or sightless soar;
Eye Nature's walks, shoot Folly as it flies,
And catch the Manners living as they rise;
Laugh where we must, be candid where we can,
But vindicate the ways of God to man.

I. Say first, of God above, or Man below,
What can we reason, but from what we know?
Of Man, what see we but his station here,
From which to reason, or to which refer?

se manifeste par des mondes innombrables, c'est à nous de le rechercher dans celui où il nous a placés. Celui qui pourrait percer au travers de la vaste immensité, voir les mondes sur les mondes former la totalité de l'univers, observer le rapport des règles systématiques d'une partie aux règles systématiques d'une autre, reconnaître d'autres planètes, d'autres soleils; quels sont les différens êtres qui peuplent chaque étoile: celui-là pourrait dire pourquoi Dieu nous a formés tels que nous sommes. Notre ame transcendante a-t-elle pénétré les ressorts de cet univers, les supports mutuels, et les liens de ses différentes parties, leurs connexions, leurs dépendances et leurs gradations? Petite partie de ce tout, pouvons-nous le comprendre?

Cette grande chaîne, qui attire et réunit toutes les parties, et qui par cette harmonie conserve l'ensemble, est-elle entre les mains de Dieu, ou entre celles de l'homme?

II. Homme présomptueux, prétends-tu découvrir la raison pourquoi tu as été formé si faible, si petit, si aveugle? Trouve d'abord, si tu le peux, pourquoi tu n'as pas été formé plus faible, plus petit, et encore moins éclairé. Fils de la terre, demande-lui pourquoi les chênes sont plus hauts et plus forts que les ronces auxquelles ils donnent de l'ombrage: ou demande aux plaines azurées pourquoi les satellites de Jupiter sont moindres que Jupiter.

Si l'on convient que de tous les systèmes possibles la sagesse infinie doit préférer le meilleur, où tout doit être rempli, parce qu'autrement il n'y aurait pas de cohérence; et où tout ce qui est, est dans le degré où il doit être, il est donc évident que dans les divers degrés de la vie et des sens, il doit y avoir quelque part un être tel que l'homme. Et toute la question (que l'on dispute tant qu'on voudra) se réduit à savoir si Dieu a fait injustice à l'homme en le plaçant dans le degré où il est.

Thro' worlds unnumber'd tho' the God be known,
'Tis ours to trace him only in our own.
He, who thro' vast immensity can pierce,
See worlds on worlds compose one universe,
Observe how system into system runs,
What other planets circle other suns,
What vary'd Beings people every star,
May tell, why Heav'n has made us as we are.
But of this frame the bearings and the ties,
The strong connections, nice dependencies,
Gradations just, has thy pervading soul
Look'd thro'? or can a part contain the whole?

Is the great Chain that draws all to agree,
And drawn supports, upheld by God, or thee?

II. Presumptuous man! the reason wouldst thou find,
Why form'd so weak, so little, and so blind?
First, if thou canst, the harder reason guess,
Why form'd no weaker, blinder, and no less?
Ask of thy mother earth, why oaks are made
Taller or stronger than the weeds they shade?
Or ask of yonder argent fields above,
Why JOVE's Satellites are less than JOVE?

Of Systems possible, if tis confest
That Wisdom infinite must form the best,
Where all must full, or not coherent be,
And all that rises, rise in due degree;
Then, in the scale of reas'ning life, 'tis plain,
There must be, some where, such a rank as Man;
And all the question (wrangle e'er so long)
Is only this, if God has plac'd him wrong?

Cela même que nous appelons injustice par rapport à l'homme, étant considéré comme relatif au tout, non-seulement peut, mais encore doit être juste. Dans les ouvrages humains, poursuivis avec un travail pénible, mille mouvemens produisent à peine une seule fin. Dans les ouvrages de Dieu, un simple mouvement non-seulement produit sa fin, mais encore seconde une autre opération. Ainsi l'homme, qui paraît ici le principal Être, ne joue peut-être qu'un rôle secondaire par rapport à une sphère inconnue, est le mobile de quelque roue, le moyen de quelque fin : car nous ne voyons qu'une partie, et non le tout.

Quand un fier coursier connaîtra pourquoi l'homme le modère dans sa course orgueilleuse, ou le pousse au travers des plaines ; quand le bœuf stupide saura pourquoi il sillonne la terre, ou pourquoi, métamorphosé en dieu égyptien, il est couronné de guirlandes ; alors la sotte présomption de l'homme pourra comprendre l'usage et la fin de son être, de ses passions et de ses actions ; pourquoi il agit et souffre, pourquoi il est retenu et il est excité ; pourquoi, esclave dans ce moment, c'est dans cet autre une divinité.

Ne disons donc point que l'homme est imparfait ; que le ciel a tort ; disons plutôt que l'homme est aussi parfait qu'il doit l'être : son être est proportionné à son état, au lieu qu'il occupe ; son temps n'est qu'un moment ; un point est son espace.

III. Le ciel cache à toutes les créatures le livre du destin, excepté la page nécessaire, celle de leur état présent ; il cache aux bêtes ce que l'homme connaît, aux hommes ce que connaissent les esprits : autrement qui pourrait ici-bas supporter son existence ? Ta volupté condamne aujourd'hui l'agneau à la mort ; s'il avait ta raison, bondirait-il et se jouerait-il dans la plaine? Content jusqu'au dernier moment, il broute le pâturage fleuri, et lèche la main qui s'élève pour

Respecting Man, whatever wrong we call,
May, must be right, as relative to all.
In human works, though labour'd on with pain,
A thousand movements scarce one purpose gain;
In God's, one single can its end produce;
Yet serves to second too some other use.
So Man, who here seems principal alone,
Perhaps acts second to some sphere unknown,
Touches some wheel, or verges to some goal;
'Tis but a part we see, and not a whole.
When the proud steed shall know why Man restrains
His fiery course, or drives him o'er the plains;
When the dull Ox, why now he breaks the clod,
Is now a victim, and now Aegypt's God:
Then shall Man's pride and dulness comprehend
His actions', passions', being's use and end;
Why doing, suff'ring, check'd, impell'd, and why
This hour a slave, the next a deity.
Then say not, Man's imperfect, heav'n in fault;
Say rather, Man's as perfect as he ought:
His knowledge measur'd to his state and place;
His time a moment, and a point his space.
If to be perfect in a certain sphere,
What matter, soon or late, or here or there?
The blest to-day is as completely so,
As who began a thousand years ago.
III. Heav'n from all creatures hides the book of Fate,
All but the page prescrib'd, their present state;
From brutes what men, from men what spirits know:
Or who could suffer Being here below?
The lamb, thy riot dooms to bleed to-day,
Had he thy Reason, would he skip and play?
Pleas'd to the last, he crops the flow'ry food,
And licks the hand just rais'd to shed his blood.

l'égorger. O ignorance de l'avenir, qui nous est charitablement donnée, afin que chacun puisse remplir le cercle que lui a marqué le ciel, qui voit d'un œil égal, étant le Dieu de tous, un héros périr et un passereau tomber; les atomes se confondre, ou les cieux se bouleverser; une bulle d'eau, ou un monde s'évanouir!

Homme, sois donc humble dans tes espérances, et ne prends d'essort qu'avec crainte. Attends ce grand maître, la mort; et adore Dieu. Il ne te fait point connaître quel sera ton bonheur à venir, mais il te donne l'espérance pour ton bonheur présent. Une espérance éternelle fleurit dans le cœur de l'homme : il n'est jamais heureux, il doit toujours l'être. L'ame inquiète et renfermée en elle-même se repose et se promène dans une vie future.

Voyez ce pauvre Indien, dont l'esprit ignorant voit son Dieu dans les nuées ou l'entend dans le vent. Une science orgueilleuse n'apprit point à son ame à s'élever aussi haut que l'orbe du soleil, et que la voie lactée. Et cependant la simple nature lui donna l'espérance d'un ciel plus bas, au-delà d'une montagne dont le sommet est enveloppé dans les nuages, d'un monde moins dangereux dans l'épaisseur des forêts, de quelque île plus heureuse située au milieu d'une plaine liquide, où ce pauvre esclave retrouve encore une fois son pays natal; il n'y trouve ni les tourmens, ni les chrétiens altérés d'or. Exister est la satisfaction de ses désirs naturels : il ne souhaite point les ailes des anges, ni le feu des séraphins; mais il pense que son chien fidèle, admis dans le même ciel, lui tiendra compagnie.

IV. Toi donc, qui es plus habile, pèse dans les balances de ta raison ton opinion contre la Providence; appelle imperfection ce qui te semble tel : dis, ci Dieu donne trop, là, il donne trop peu. Détruis toutes les créatures pour ton goût et ton plaisir; et crie cependant, si l'homme est

Oh blindness to the future! kindly giv'n,
That each may fill the circle mark'd by Heav'n:
Who sees with equal eye, as God of all,
A hero perish, or a sparrow fall,
Atoms or systems into ruin hurl'd,
And now a bubble burst, and now a world.
Hope humbly then; with trembling pinions soar;
Wait the great teacher Death; and God adore.
What future bliss, he gives not thee to know,
But gives that Hope to be thy blessing now.
Hope springs eternal in the human breast:
Man never is, but always to be, blest:
The soul, uneasy and confin'd from home,
Rests and expatiates in a life to come.
Lo, the poor Indian! whose untutor'd mind
Sees God in clouds, or hears him in the wind;
His soul, proud Science never taught to stray
Far as the solar walk, or milky way;
Yet simple Nature to his hope has giv'n,
Behind the cloud-topt hill, and humbler heav'n;
Some safer world in depth of woods embrac'd,
Some happier island in the wat'ry waste,
Where slaves once more their native land behold,
No fiends torment, no Christians thirst for gold.
To be, contents his natural desire,
He asks no Angel's wing, no Seraph's fire:
But thinks, admitted to that equal sky,
His faithful dog shall bear him company.

IV. Go, wiser thou! and, in the scale of sense,
Weigh thy Opinion against Providence;
Call imperfection what thou fancy'st such,
Say, here he gives too little, there too much!
Destroy all creatures for thy sport or gust,

malheureux, si l'homme seul n'occupe pas tous les soins d'en haut, s'il n'est pas le seul être parfait ici-bas, immortel dans le ciel, Dieu est injuste; arrache de ses mains la balance et le sceptre, juge la justice même, et sois le Dieu de Dieu.

Notre erreur vient d'une raison orgueilleuse. On sort de sa sphère et l'on s'élance vers les cieux. L'orgueil vise toujours aux demeures célestes; les hommes voudraient être des anges, et les anges des dieux. Si les anges qui ont aspiré à être des dieux sont tombés, les hommes qui aspirent à être anges sont rebelles; et qui veut renverser les lois et l'ordre péche contre la cause éternelle.

V. Que l'on demande pour quelle fin brillent les corps célestes, pourquoi la terre existe, l'orgueil répond : « C'est » pour moi. Pour moi la nature libérale excite ses puis- » sances productrices, fait germer l'herbe et épanouir les » fleurs. Pour moi le raisin renouvelle toutes les années son » jus de nectar, et la rose sa fraîcheur odoriférante. Pour » moi, la mine enfante mille trésors. Pour moi la santé dé- » coule de mille sources, les mers roulent leurs ondes pour » me transporter, le soleil se lève pour m'éclairer, la » terre est mon marche-pied, et le ciel couvre ma tête. »

Mais la nature ne s'écarte-t-elle point de sa bonté et de sa fin, lorsqu'un soleil brûlant darde des rayons mortels? lorsque des tremblemens de terre engloutissent des villes, et que des inondations submergent des peuples entiers?

Non, répondra l'orgueil. « La première cause toute » puissante n'agit point par des lois particulières, mais par » des lois générales. Les exceptions sont rares. Il y a eu » quelques altérations depuis le commencement, mais qu'y » a-t-il de créé qui soit parfait? »

Pourquoi donc l'homme le serait-il? Si la félicité humaine est la grande fin, et que la nature s'en écarte, pour-

Yet cry, If Man's unhappy, God's unjust;
If Man alone ingross not Heav'n's high care,
Alone made perfect here, immortal there:
Snatch from his hand the balance and the rod,
Re-judge his justice, be the God of God.
In Pride, in reas'ning Pride, our error lies;
All quit their sphere, and rush into the skies.
Pride still is aiming at the blest abodes,
Men would be Angels, Angels would be Gods.
Aspiring to be Gods, if Angels fell;
Aspiring to be Angels, Men rebel:
And who but wishes to invert the laws
Of Order, sins against th'Eternal Cause.
V. Ask for what end the heav'nly bodies shine,
Earth for whose use? Pride answers, « T'is for mine:
» For me kind Nature wakes her genial pow'r,
» Suckles each herb, and spreads out ev'ry flow'r;
» Annual for me the grape, the rose renew
» The juice nectareous, and the balmy dew;
» For me, the mine a thousand treasures brings;
» For me, health gushes from a thousand springs;
» Seas roll to waft me, suns to light me rise;
» My foot-stool earth, my canopy the skies. »
But errs not nature from this gracious end,
From burning suns when livid deaths descend,
When earthquakes swallow, or when tempests sweep
Towns to one grave, whole nations to the deep?
» No ('tis reply'd) the first Almighty Cause
» Acts not by partial, but by gen'ral laws;
» Th'exceptions few; some change since all began:
» And what created perfect? » —Why then Man?
If the great end be human Happiness,
Then Nature deviate; and can Man do less?
As much that end a constant course requires
Of show'rs and sun-shine, as of Man's desires;

quoi l'homme ne s'en écarterait-il pas aussi? Cette fin n'exige pas moins un cours constamment alternatif de pluie et de beau temps, qu'une révolution continuelle de désirs dans l'homme; elle exige aussi peu de printemps éternels et des cieux sans nuages, que des hommes toujours sages, calmes et modérés; si des pertes ou des tremblemens de terre ne renversent pas l'ordre prescrit par le ciel, pourquoi l'existence d'un Borgia ou d'un Catilina le renverserait-elle? C'est de l'orgueil que jaillissent nos raisonnemens; jugeons des choses morales ainsi que des choses naturelles. Pourquoi blâmer le ciel dans celles-là, et le disculper dans celles-ci? Dans les unes et dans les autres, pour bien raisonner, il faut se soumettre.

Peut-être nous paraîtrait-il mieux que dans le monde physique tout fût harmonie, que dans le monde moral tout fût vertu; que jamais l'air ou l'océan ne ressentît le souffle des vents, et que jamais l'ame ne fût agitée par aucune passion. Mais tout subsiste par un combat élémentaire; et les passions sont les élémens de la vie. L'ordre général a été observé depuis le commencement, et dans la nature, et dans l'homme.

VI. Que voudrait-il, cet homme? tantôt il s'élève, et moindre qu'un ange il voudrait être davantage; tantôt baissant les yeux vers la terre, il paraît chagrin de n'avoir point la force du taureau et la fourrure de l'ours; s'il dit que toutes les créatures sont faites pour son usage, de quel usage lui seraient-elles s'il en avait toutes les propriétés?

La nature, libérale sans profusion, leur a assigné des organes, des facultés propres; elle les a dédommagées de chaque besoin apparent, les unes par des degrés de vitesse, les autres par des degrés de force, tous dans une proportion exacte avec leur état. Il n'y a rien à ajouter, rien à diminuer. Chaque bête, chaque insecte est heureux dans sa

As much eternal springs and cloudless skies,
As Men for ever temp'rate, calm and wise.
If plagues or earthquakes break not Heav'n's design,
Why then a Borgia, or a Catiline?
Who knows but He, whose hand the light'ning forms;
Who heaves old Ocean, and who wings the storms;
Pours fierce Ambition in a Cæsar's mind,
Or turns young Ammon loose, to scourge mankind?
From pride, from pride, our very reas'ning springs;
Account for moral, as for nat'ral things.
Why charge we Heav'n in those in these acquit?
In both, to reason right is, to submit.
Better for us, perhaps, it might appear,
Were there all harmony, all virtue here;
That never air or ocean felt the wind;
That never passion discompos'd the mind.
But all subsists by elemental strife;
And passions are the elements of Life.
The gen'ral ORDER, since the whole began,
Is kept in Nature, and is kept in Man.

VI. What would this Man? Now upward will he soar,
And little less than Angel, would be more;
Now looking downwards, just as griev'd appears
To want the strength of bulls, the fur of bears.
Made for his use all creatures if he call,
Say what their use, had he the pow'rs of all?
Nature to these, without profusion, kind,
The proper organs, proper pow'rs assign'd;
Each seeming want compensated of course,
Here with degrees of swiftness, there of force;
All in exact proportion to their state;
Nothing to add, and nothing to abate.

place. Le ciel serait-il donc cruel pour l'homme, et pour l'homme uniquement? Celui-là seul qu'on appelle raisonnable ne sera-t-il satisfait de rien, à moins de tout avoir?

Le bonheur de l'homme (que l'orgueil ne le crût-il ainsi!) n'est pas de penser ou d'agir au-delà de l'homme même, d'avoir des puissances de corps et d'esprit au-delà de ce qui convient à sa nature et à son état. Pourquoi l'homme n'a-t-il point un œil microscopique? En voici une raison claire. L'homme n'est pas une mouche. Et quel en serait l'usage, si l'homme pouvait considérer un ciron, et que sa vue ne pût s'étendre jusqu'aux cieux? Quel serait l'usage d'un toucher plus délicat, si, par un excès de délicatesse, les douleurs et les agonies s'introduisaient par chaque pore? D'un odorat plus raffiné, si les parties volatiles d'une rose, par leurs vibrations dans le cerveau, nous faisaient mourir de peines aromatiques? D'une oreille plus fine? La nature tonnerait toujours, et nous étourdirait par l'harmonie de ses sphères roulantes. O combien nous regretterions alors que le ciel nous eût privés du doux bruit des zéphirs et du murmure des ruisseaux! Qui peut ne pas reconnaître la bonté et la sagesse de la Providence, également et dans ce qu'elle donne et dans ce qu'elle refuse?

VII. Autant que les divers et nombreux degrés de la création s'étendent, autant se diversifient les degrés des facultés sensitives et intellectuelles. Quelle gradation depuis ces millions d'insectes qui peuplent les champs, jusqu'à la race impériale de l'homme! Que de modifications différentes dans la vue entre ces deux extrêmes, le voile de la taupe et le rayon du lynx! dans l'odorat, entre la cruelle lionne et le chien si habile à la piste! dans l'ouïe, depuis ce qui vit dans l'onde jusqu'à tout ce qui gazouille dans les vastes feuillages! Que le toucher de l'araignée est exquis! Sensible à la plus légère impression qui affecte le moindre fil de sa toile, elle paraît

Each beast, each insect; happy in its own:
Is Heav'n unkind to Man, and Man alone?
Shall he alone, whom rational we call,
Be pleas'd with nothing, if not bless'd with all?
 The bliss of Man (could Pride that blessing find)
Is, not to act or think beyond mankind;
No pow'rs of body or soul to share,
But what his nature and his state can bear.
Why has not Man a microscopic eye?
For this plain reason, man is not a fly.
Say what the use, were finer optics giv'n,
T'inspect a mite, not comprehend the Heav'n?
Or touch, if tremblingly alive all o'er,
To smart and agonize at ev'ry pore?
Or quick effluvia darting thro' the brain,
Die of a rose in aromatic pain?
If nature thunder'd in his op'ning ears,
And stunn'd him with the music of the spheres,
How would he wish that Heav'n had left him still
The whisp'ring Zephyr, and the purling rill?
Who finds not Providence all good and wise,
Alike in what it gives, and what denies?

 VII. Far as Creation's ample range extends,
The scale of sensual, mental pow'rs ascends:
Mark how it mounts, to Man's imperial race,
From the green myriads in the peopled grass:
What modes of sight betwixt each wide extreme,
The mole's dim curtain, and the lynx's beam:
Of smell, the headlong lioness between,
And hound sagacious on the tainted green:
Of hearing, from the life that fills the flood,
To that which warbles through the vernal wood?
The spider's touch, how exquisitely fine!

vivre dans l'ouvrage qu'elle a tissu. Que la délicate abeille a le sentiment subtil et sûr, pour extraire d'une herbe venimeuse une rosée bienfaisante! Quelle différence d'instinct entre celui d'une truie qui se vautre et entre le tien, ô éléphant, être presque raisonnable! Que la barrière est mince entre l'instinct et la raison, séparés pour toujours, et toujours très-proches! Quelle alliance entre la réflexion et le ressouvenir! Que peu de chose divise le sentiment de la pensée! Toutes ces facultés moyennes tâchent de s'unir sans pouvoir jamais passer la ligne qui les sépare. Sans cette juste gradation entre les différentes créatures, les unes pourraient-elles être soumises aux autres et toutes à toi? Toutes leurs puissances sont vaincues par toi seulement: ta raison n'est-elle pas seule toutes ces puissances ensemble?

VIII. Regarde au travers de l'air, sur la terre, sur la mer, la matière près d'éclore, s'agiter, crever, et produire. Quelle progression d'êtres s'élève en haut, s'étend sur la surface, se cache dans la profondeur! Quelle chaîne qui commence depuis Dieu! Natures éthérées et terrestres, ange, homme, bête, oiseau, poisson, insecte; étendue que l'œil ne peut voir, que l'optique ne peut atteindre, depuis l'infini jusqu'à toi, depuis toi jusqu'au néant! si nous pouvions empiéter sur les puissances supérieures, les inférieures le pourraient sur nous; autrement il y aurait un vide dans la création, où un degré étant ôté, toutes les proportions sont détruites; où un chaînon étant rompu, toute la grande chaîne est brisée, et l'est également, que ce chaînon soit le dixième ou le dix-millième.

Si chaque monde se meut dans un ordre graduel qui n'est pas moins de son essence que de celle de l'univers, ce tout merveilleux, la moindre confusion dans un seul entraînerait non-seulement la ruine de ce monde particulier, mais encore celle du grand tout. La terre perdant son équilibre

Feels at each thread, and lives along the line:
In the nice bee, what sense so subtly true
From pois'nous herbs extracts the healing dew:
How Instinct varies in the grov'ling swine,
Compar'd, half-reas'ning elephant, with thine!
'Twixt that, and Reason, what a nice barrier?
For ever sep'rate, yet for ever near!
Remembrance and Reflection how ally'd;
What thin partitions Sense from Thought divide?
And middle-natures, how they long to join,
Yet never pass th' insuperable line!
Without this just gradation, could they be
Subjected, these to those, or all to thee?
The pow'rs of all subdu'd by thee alone,
Is not thy Reason all these pow'rs in one?

VIII. See, thro' this air, this ocean, and this earth,
All matter quick, and bursting into birth.
Above, how high, progressive life may go!
Around, how wide! how deep extend below!
Vast chain of Being! which from God began,
Natures æthereal, human, angel, man,
Beast, bird, fish, insect, what no eye can see,
No glass can reach; from Infinite to thee,
From thee to Nothing. — On superior pow'rs
Were we to press, inferior might on ours:
Or in the full creation leave a void,
Where, one step broken, the great scale's destroy'd:
From Nature's chain whatever link you strike,
Tenth, or ten thousandth, breaks the chain alike.
And, if each system in gradation roll
Alike essential to th'amazing Whole:
The least confusion but in one, not all
That system only, but the Whole must fall.

s'écarterait de son orbite; les planètes et le soleil courraient sans règles au travers des cieux, les anges présidant à chaque sphère en seraient précipités, un être s'abîmerait sur un autre être, un monde sur un autre monde; toute la fondation des cieux s'ébranlerait jusque dans son centre; la nature frémirait jusques au trône de Dieu; tout cet ordre admirable serait rompu. Pour qui? pour toi, ver méprisable! O folie, orgueil, impiété!

IX. Que si le pied destiné à fouler la poussière, ou la main destinée au travail, aspirait d'être la tête; si la tête, l'œil ou l'oreille se fâchaient de n'être que les purs instrumens de l'esprit qui les gouverne; quelle absurdité! et ce n'en est pas une moindre si, dans cette machine générale, une partie prétend être une autre partie, et se révolter contre la tâche ou la peine que le grand esprit ordonnateur de tout a marquée.

Tout ce qui existe n'est que partie d'un tout surprenant dont la nature est le corps, et dont Dieu est l'ame; il se diversifie dans chaque être, et cependant il est toujours le même. Il est aussi grand dans l'économie de la terre que dans celle de la machine éthérée. Il échauffe dans le soleil, rafraîchit dens le zéphir, brille dans les étoiles et fleurit sur les arbres. Il vit dans chaque vie, s'étend dans toute étendue, se répand sans se partager, donne sans rien perdre, respire dans notre ame, anime notre partie mortelle, également parfait dans la formation d'un cheveu et dans celle du cœur, dans l'homme vil qui se plaint, et dans le séraphin transporté qui n'est qu'amour et que louange; pour lui rien de haut, de bas, de grand, de petit; il remplit, il limite, il enchaîne, il égale tout.

X. Cesse donc, et ne taxe point cet ordre d'imperfection. Notre bonheur dépend de ce que nous blâmons. Connais ton

Let Earth unbalanc'd from her orbit fly,
Planets and Suns run lawless thro' the sky;
Let ruling Angels from their spheres be hurl'd,
Being on Being wreck'd, and world on world;
Heav'ns whole foundations to their centre nod,
And Nature tremble to the throne of God.
All this dread Order break — for whom? for thee?
Vile worm! — oh Madness! Pride! Impiety!

IX. What if the foot, ordain'd the dust to tread,
Or hand, to toil, aspir'd to be the head?
What if the heat, the eye, or ear repin'd
To serve mere engines to the ruling Mind?
Just as absurd for any part to claim
To be another, in this gen'ral frame:
Just as absurd, to mourn the tasks or pains,
The great directing Mind of all ordains.
All are but parts of one stupendous whole,
Whose body Nature is, and God the soul;
That, chang'd thro' all, and yet in all the same;
Great in the earth, as in th' æthereal frame;
Warms in the sun, refreshes in the breeze,
Glows in the stars, and blossoms in the trees,
Lives thro' all life, extends thro' all extent,
Spreads undivided, operates unspent;
Breathes in our soul, informs our mortal part,
As full, as perfect, in a hair as heart;
As full, as perfect, in vile Man that mourns,
As the rapt Seraph that adores and burns:
To him no high, no low, no great, no small;
He fills, he bounds, connects, and equals all.

X. Cease then, nor Order Imperfection name:
Our proper bliss depends on what we blame.

être, ton point. Le ciel t'a donné un juste, un heureux degré d'aveuglement et de faiblesse. Soumets-toi, sûr d'être aussi heureux que tu peux l'être dans cette sphère ou dans quelque autre sphère que ce soit; et certain, ou à l'heure de ta naissance, ou à celle de la mort, de trouver ton salut entre les mains de qui dispose de tout. La nature entière est un art, et un art qui t'est inconnu; le hasard est une direction que tu ne saurais voir; la discorde est une harmonie que tu ne comprends point; le mal particulier est un bien général; et en dépit de l'orgueil, en dépit d'une raison qui s'égare, cette vérité est évidente : QUE TOUT CE QUI EST, EST BIEN.

Know thy own point : This kind , this due degree
Of blindness , weakness , Heav'n bestows on thee.
Submit. — In this , or any other sphere,
Secure to be as blest as thou canst bear
Safe in the hand of one disposing Pow'r
Or in the natal , or the mortal hour.
All Nature is but Art , unknown to thee ;
All Chance , Direction , which thou canst not see ;
All Discord , Harmony not understood ;
All partial Evil , universal Good :
And , spite of Pride , in erring Reason's spite ,
One truth is clear , WHATEVER IS , IS RIGHT.

LE PARADIS PERDU.

CHANT TROISIÈME.

Je te salue, ô lumière sacrée! fille aînée des cieux! ou, si je peux t'appeler ainsi sans blasphème, éternel rayon de l'Éternel. Oui, puisque Dieu est tout lumière, puisque de toute éternité il habite au centre d'une inaccessible lumière, c'est en toi qu'il réside, brillante émanation d'une incréée et brillante essence! ou, si tu préfères enfin ce nom, écoulement de pur éther! Qui pourra nous révéler ta source? Avant le soleil, avant les cieux, tu étais : Dieu parla; et tu enveloppas, comme d'un manteau, le monde naissant, masse fluide et noire, tirée de l'immense et informe chaos.

Je reparais devant toi d'une aile plus assurée : échappé de l'empire du Styx, j'ai long-temps été retenu sur ses obscurs rivages. Mon vol s'est soutenu dans les épaisses ténèbres, et dans l'intervalle moins sombre, entre le ciel et les enfers, tandis que je chantais le chaos et l'éternelle nuit, en tirant de ma lyre des accens qu'Orphée ne fit point entendre. Une muse céleste m'enhardit à descendre au fond du noir abîme; elle me ramène à la clarté, retour pénible et rare! Vainqueur des dangers, je reparais devant toi; je sens ton flambeau vivifiant et souverain; mais toi, tu ne reparais point à ces yeux qui roulent en vain pour trouver tes rayons perçans, et qui ne trouvent pas même d'aurore; soit qu'une humeur glacée les ait éteints pour jamais, soit qu'un nuage passager en suspende seulement l'usage. Cependant, enivré des charmes d'une sainte harmonie, mes pas errans me ra-

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK THE THIRD.

Hail, holy Light, offspring of heav'n first-born!
Or of th'Eternal coeternal beam
May I express thee unblaim'd? since God is Light,
And never but in unapproached light
Dwelt from eternity; dwelt then in thee,
Bright effluence of bright essence increate.
Or hea'rst thou rather, pure ethereal stream,
Whose fountain who shall tell? before the Sun,
Before the Heav'ns thou wert, and at the voice
Of God, as with a mantle didst invest
Thee rising world of waters dark and deep,
Won from the void and formless infinite.
Thee I re-visit now with bolder wing,
Escap'd the Stygian pool, though long detain'd
In that obscure sojourn; while in my flight
Through utter and through middle darkness borne,
With other notes than to th'Orphean lyre,
I sung of Chaos and eternal Night;
Taught by the heav'nly Muse to venture down
The dark descent, and up to re-ascend,
Though hard and rare. Thee I revisit safe,
And feel thy sov'reign vital lamp; but thou
Revisit'st not these eyes, that roll in vain
To find thy piercing ray, and find no dawn;
So thick a *drop serene* hath quench'd their orbs,
Or dim suffusion veil'd. Yet not the more
Cease I to wander, where the Muses haunt

mènent toujours au milieu des lieux chéris des muses, les claires fontaines, les bois touffus, les collines dorées ; toi surtout, ô Sion! et vous, ruisseaux fleuris, qui baignez en murmurant ses pieds sacrés! c'est vous que, dans le silence des nuits, je me plais à visiter. Souvent je me rappelle ces deux mortels dont l'infortune fut égale à la mienne : (et puissé-je les égaler de même en célébrité!) l'aveugle Thamyris, l'aveugle fils de Méon; et ces antiques prophètes, Tirésias et Phinée. Ainsi mon esprit se repaît de pensées qui rendent d'elles-mêmes d'harmonieux accords. Tel, enfoncé sous un épais feuillage, l'oiseau solitaire fait retentir les ténèbres de ses chants nocturnes.

Les saisons reviennent avec l'année; mais le jour ne revient plus pour moi, ni la douce lueur du soir et du matin, ni le spectacle enchanteur de la fleur printanière, de la rose d'été, des troupeaux errans dans les campagnes, ni la majesté du céleste visage de l'homme. Un nuage, une éternelle nuit m'environne. Je suis rejeté loin des rians sentiers des humains. Le livre des savantes merveilles est vainement ouvert. La nature a perdu sa forme et sa couleur; et la sagesse avait un accès dans mon ame, qui lui est fermé sans retour. O céleste lumière! mon esprit a d'autant plus de droits à ta clarté. Couvre-le de tes rayons sublimes; donne-lui des yeux; écartes-en jusqu'au moindre nuage, afin que je puisse voir et raconter ce que nul œil mortel ne peut apercevoir.

Du haut de ce pur empyrée, où il est assis sur un trône élevé au-dessus de toutes les grandeurs, le Tout-Puissant avait abaissé sa vue pour contempler à la fois et ses propres œuvres et celles qu'elles avaient produites. Debout, autour

Clear spring, or shady grove, or sunny hill,
Smit with the love of sacred song; but chief
Thee, Sion, and the flow'ry brooks beneath,
That wash thy hallowed feet, and warbling flow,
Nightly I visit: nor sometimes forget
Those other two equall'd with me in fate,
So were I equall'd with them in renown,
Blind Thamyris, and blind Mæonides;
And Tiresias, and Phineus, prophets old:
Then feed on thoughts, that voluntary move
Harmonious numbers; as the wakeful bird
Sings darkling, and in shadiest covert hid
Tunes her nocturnal note.
Thus with the year
Seasons return; but not to me returns
Day, or the sweet approach of ev'n or morn,
Or sight of vernal bloom, or summer's rose,
Or flocks, or herds, or human face divine;
Cut cloud instead, and ever-during dark
Surrounds me from the cheerful ways of men
Cut off, and for the book of knowledge fair
Presented with an universal blank
Of nature's works, to me expung'd and ras'd,
And wisdom at one entrance quite shut out.
So much the rather thou, celestial Light,
Shine inward, and the mind through all her pow'rs
Irradiate, there plant eyes, all mist from thence
Purge and disperse, that I may see and tell
Of things invisible to mortal sight.
Now had th'almighty Father from above,
From the pure empyrean where he sits
High thron'd above all height, bent down his eye,
His own works and their works at once to view:
About him all the Sanctities of heav'n

de lui, les saintetés célestes, aussi nombreuses que les étoiles, recueillaient de ses regards une béatitude inexprimable, et sur un siége, à sa droite, était son Fils unique, la rayonnante image de sa gloire. Il aperçoit d'abord sur la terre nos deux premiers pères, les seuls encore du genre humain, goûtant, dans l'heureuse solitude d'Eden, les fruits immortels de l'amour et du contentement, d'un contentement inaltérable, d'un amour sans rivalité. Ensuite il observe l'enfer et le gouffre qui sépare ce lieu de la terre : il voit, élevé dans l'obscurité, Satan qui vogue entre les remparts célestes et les frontières de la nuit, impatient de reposer ses ailes et ses pieds, également fatigués, sur l'aride surface du monde, globe informe aux yeux du prince des rebelles, sphère sans firmament, suspendue au milieu des airs ou d'un vaste océan. L'Éternel, suivant son vol du haut de son trône sublime, d'où il découvre à la fois le passé, le présent et l'avenir, adresse à son Fils unique ces paroles prophétiques :

O mon Fils! le seul que j'aie produit, vois-tu la fureur qui transporte notre ennemi? Ni l'enceinte des enfers, ni l'immensité de l'abîme, ni l'énorme poids de ses chaînes, rien n'a pu le retenir; tant il est violemment entraîné par une vengeance désespérée qui retombera sur sa tête rebelle. Déjà près de la voûte céleste, il vole, dégagé de ses fers, sur les confins de la lumière; il s'avance vers ce nouveau monde où j'ai placé l'homme, résolu de le détruire par la force, ou, ce qui lui sera plus funeste encore, de le corrompre par quelque insidieux artifice. Il le corrompra; l'homme prêtera l'oreille à sa flatteuse imposture; il violera,

Stood thick as stars, and from his sight receiv'd
Beatitude past utterance; on his right
The radiant image of his glory sat,
His only Son. On earth he first beheld
Our two first parents, yet the only two
Of mankind, in the happy garden plac'd,
Reaping immortal fruits of joy and love,
Uninterrupted joy, unrivall'd love,
In blissful solitude. He then survey'd
Hell and the gulf between, and Satan there
Coasting the wall of heav'n on this side night,
In the dun air sublime; and ready now
To stoop, with wearied wings and willing feet,
On the bare outside of this world, that seem'd
Firm land embosom'd, without firmament;
Uncertain which, in ocean or in air.
Him God beholding from his prospect high,
Wherein past, present, future, he beholds,
Thus to his only Son foreseeing spake.
  Only begotten Son, seest thou what rage
Transports our Adversary? whom no bounds
Prescrib'd, no bars of hell, nor all the chains
Heap'd on him there, nor yet the main abyss,
Wide interrupt, can hold? so bent he seems
On desp'rate revenge, that shall redound
Upon his own rebellious head. And now,
Through all restraint broke loose, he wings his way
Not far off heav'n, in the precincts of light,
Directly tow'rds the new-created world,
And Man there plac'd, with purpose to assay
If him by force he can destroy, or worse,
By some false guile pervert: and shall pervert,
For Man will hearken to his glozing lies,
And easily transgress the sole command,

sans hésiter, l'unique défense qui lui fut imposée, seul gage de son obéissance. Il tombera, il entraînera dans sa chute toute sa race infidèle. Qui pourra-t-il accuser, qui, si ce n'est lui même? L'ingrat! il a reçu de moi tout ce qu'il en pouvait recevoir : je l'ai créé juste et droit, libre de tomber, mais capable de se soutenir ; tels j'ai formé tous les esprits, toutes les puissances célestes, les fidèles ainsi que les coupables. Aussi libre fut la chute des coupables que la persévérance des fidèles. S'ils n'avaient été libres ; si la nécessité, et non leur volonté, eût produit leurs actions, où auraient été les vraies preuves d'une foi sincère, d'un pur amour? quel eût été leur mérite? Et moi, si leur volonté, si leur raison, cette raison qui n'est que la faculté de choisir, si l'une et l'autre, vaines et sans fruit, esclaves et passives, n'eussent servi que la nécessité en m'obéissant, quelle satisfaction aurais-je pu recueillir d'une telle obéissance? Tous les êtres sont donc formés comme ils ont dû l'être. Nul ne peut, sans injustice, accuser son créateur, sa nature ou son sort; comme si sa volonté, soumise à la prédestination, était déterminée par une inflexible loi, ou par la prescience suprême. La révolte des pervers est leur propre ouvrage, et non pas le mien ; quoique je l'eusse prévue, ma prescience n'eut aucune influence sur leur faute ; ils ne l'auraient pas moins commise, quand je ne l'aurais pas prévue. Ainsi, disposant eux-mêmes en tout de leur jugement et de leur choix, si les hommes deviennent coupables, ce sera sans la moindre impulsion du destin, et sans que ma pénétration dans l'avenir le rende immuable. Je les ai créés libres; ils ne cesseront de l'être que lorsqu'ils s'enchaîneront eux-mêmes : autrement, il faudrait changer leur nature et révoquer la loi suprême, immuable, éternelle, qui leur assigne cette liberté dont ils se serviront pour opérer leur ruine. Corrompus et dépravés par eux-mêmes, les premiers rebelles sont tombés par leur propre séduction : l'homme tombe égaré

Sole pledge of his obedience; so will fall
He, and his faithless progeny. Whose fault?—
Whose but his own? Ingrate, he had of me
All he could have; I made him just and right,
Sufficient to have stood, though free to fall.
Such I created all th'ethereal powers
And Sp'rits, both them who stood, and them who fail'd;
Freely they stood who stood,—and fell who fell.
Not free, what proof could they have giv'n sincere
Of true allegiance, constant faith or love,
Where only what they needs must do, appear'd,
Not what they would? what praise could they receive?
What pleasure I from such obedience paid,
When will and reason (reason also is choice)
Useless and vain, of freedom both despoil'd,
Made passive both, had serv'd necessity,
Not me?—They therefore, as to right belong'd,
So were created, nor can justly accuse
Their Maker, or their making, or their fate,
As if predestination over-rul'd
Their will, dispos'd by absolute decree,
Or high foreknowledge. They themselves decreed
Their own revolt, not I; if I foreknew,
Foreknowledge had no influence on their fault,
Which had no less prov'd certain unforeknown.
So without least impulse or shadow of fate,
Or ought by me immutably foreseen,
They trespass, authors to themselves in all,
Both what they judge, and what they choose; for so
I form'd them free; and so they must remain,
Till they inthral themselves; I else must change
Their nature, and revoke the high decree
Unchangeable, eternal, which ordain'd
Their freedom; they themselves ordain'd their fall.

par leurs artifices ; l'homme trouvera donc grâce : il n'en est point pour les autres. Ainsi ma gloire sera célébrée dans les cieux et sur la terre, par la clémence et la justice, par la clémence surtout : elle parut la première ; elle brillera la dernière, et avec le plus d'éclat.

Tandis que Dieu parlait, un parfum d'ambroisie se répandait dans l'empyrée, et le sein des fortunés élus se remplissait d'un nouveau sentiment de joie ineffable. Le Fils du Tout-Puissant rayonnait d'une gloire incomparable ; en lui brillait tout son Père substantiellement exprimé, et sur son visage respiraient la divine compassion, l'amour sans fin et la grâce sans mesure. Ces sentimens éclatèrent en ces termes :

O mon Père ! qu'elle est douce, cette parole qui termine ta sentence souveraine ! l'homme trouvera grâce. Le ciel et la terre célébreront tes louanges ; des hymnes, de saints cantiques, s'élevant sans nombre autour de ton trône, le feront retentir de ton nom à jamais béni. Et la pourrais-tu permettre, la ruine totale de l'homme ? laisserais-tu le plus jeune et le plus chéri de tes enfans, poussé par sa propre folie, tomber dans les filets de l'imposture ? O mon Père ! juge de tous les êtres ! seul juge équitable ! loin, loin de toi une telle pensée. Ton adversaire réussirait dans ses projets, et les tiens seraient renversés ! Sa malice serait triomphante, et ta bonté sans effet ! Il s'en retournerait sévèrement puni, sans doute, mais satisfait, mais fier de sa vengeance, traînant après lui, dans les enfers, la race entière du genre humain, pervertie par ses artifices ! Voudrais-tu, toi-même, détruire ainsi ton propre ouvrage, et anéantir, pour le plaisir de ton ennemi, ce que tu as créé pour ta gloire ? On

The first sort by their own suggestion fell,
Self-tempted, self-deprav'd : man falls, deceiv'd
By th'other first; man therefore shall find grace,
The other none. In mercy and justice both,
Through heav'n and earth, so shall my glory excel;
But mercy first and last shall brightest shine.
Thus while God spake, ambrosial fragrance fill'd
All heav'n and in the blessed spirits elect
Sense of new joy inneffable diffus'd.
Beyond compare the Son of God was seen
Most glorious; in him all his Father shone
Substantially expressed; and in his face
Divine compassion visibly appear'd,
Love without end, and without measure grace,
Which uttering, thus he to his Father spake:
O Father, gracious was that word which clos'd
Thy sov'reign sentence, that man should find grace;
For which both heav'n and earth shall high extol
Thy praises, with th'innumerable sound
Of hymns and sacred songs, wherewith thy throne
Encompass'd shall resound thee ever bless'd.
For should man finally be lost, should man,
Thy creature late so lov'd, thy youngest son,
Fall circumvented thus by fraud, though join'd
With his own folly? that be from thee far;
That far be from thee, Father, who art judge
Of all things made, and judgest only right.
Or shall the adversary thus obtain
His end, and frustrate thine? shall he fulfil
His malice, and thy goodness bring to nought,
Or proud return, though to his heavier doom,
Yet with revenge accomplish'd, and to hell
Draw after him the whole race of mankind,
By him corrupted? or wilt thou thyself

oserait alors douter de ta grandeur et de ta bonté, et ton pouvoir serait blasphémé sans trouver de défenseur.

Le souverain créateur lui répondit : O mon Fils! en qui mon ame trouve ses plus chères délices! Fils sorti de mon sein! Fils qui seul es mon verbe, ma sagesse et ma puissance productrice, tu viens d'énoncer mes pensées et le projet de mes décrets éternels. La perte du genre humain ne sera pas universelle. Quiconque le voudra sera sauvé, non par sa propre volonté, mais à l'aide de ma grâce librement accordée. Je ranimerai ses forces abattues, ses forces que le péché subjugue et rend esclave des honteuses passions. Soutenu par ma main, il repoussera l'attaque de son mortel ennemi ; ma main le soutiendra afin qu'il voie quelle est, depuis sa chute, sa faiblesse et sa misère, et qu'il ne rapporte sa délivrance à nul autre qu'à moi. J'ai distingué quelques élus par une grâce particulière : telle est ma volonté. Les autres entendront souvent ma voix; souvent ils seront avertis, dans leur coupable égarement, d'apaiser le ciel irrité, tandis qu'un pardon généreux leur est encore offert. J'éclairerai suffisamment leurs sens ténébreux et j'amollirai leur cœur de pierre, pour qu'ils prient, se repentent et me rendent l'obéissance qui m'est due. Mon oreille ne sera pas sourde, mon œil ne sera pas fermé à la prière, au repentir, à l'obéissance, pourvu que cet hommage, prescrit par le devoir, soit inspiré par un cœur sincère. Je mettrai la conscience dans leur sein, pour être leur guide et servir d'arbitre entre eux et moi. Du moment qu'ils l'écouteront, ils marcheront de lumière en lumière; et, en persévérant jusqu'au port, ils y arriveront sans naufrage. Ceux qui laisseront écouler ma longue attente, qui dédaigneront mon jour de grâce, ne le reverront jamais. Leurs cœurs durs seront encore plus endurcis, leurs yeuxaveugles encore plus aveu-

Abolish thy creation, and unmake,
For him, what for thy glory thou hast made?
So should thy goodness and thy greatness both
Be question'd and blasphem'd without defence.
To whom the Great Creator thus reply'd:
O Son, in whom my soul hath chief delight,
Son of my bosom, Son who art alone
My word, my wisdom, and effectual might,
All hast thou spoken, as my thoughts are, all
As my eternal purpose hath decreed.
Man shall not quite be lost, but sav'd who will;
Yet not of will in him, but grace in me
Freely vouchsaf'd. Once more I will renew
His lapsed pow'rs, though forfeit, and inthrall'd
By sin to foul exorbitant desires;
Upheld by me, yet once more he shall stand
On even ground against his mortal foe;
By me upheld, that he may know how frail
His fall'n condition is, and to me owe
All his deliv'rance, and to none but me.
Some I have chosen of peculiar grace,
Elect above the rest; so is my will:
The rest shall hear me call, and oft be warn'd
Their sinful state, and to appease betimes
Th'incensed Deity, while offer'd grace
Invites; for I will clear their senses dark,
What may suffice, and soften stony hearts
To pray, repent, and bring obedience due.
To pray'r, repentance, and obedience due,
Though but endeavour'd with sincere intent,
Mine ear shall not be slow, mine eye not shut;
And I will place within them as a guide,
My umpire Conscience; whom if they will hear,
Light after light, well us'd, they shall attain,

glés, afin que; chancelans à chaque pas, ils se précipitent dans les plus profonds abîmes. Ceux-là seuls sont exclus de ma miséricorde; mais cette punition ne suffit pas encore à ma justice. L'homme désobéissant et perfide qui viole la foi jurée, qui outrage la haute souveraineté des cieux, perd tous ses droits en voulant usurper ceux de la divinité : il ne lui reste rien pour expier son crime. Victime dévouée au trépas, il doit périr, lui et toute sa postérité; il doit périr, ou il n'est plus de justice, si quelque autre ne joint au pouvoir la volonté de payer cette terrible rançon, mort pour mort. Parlez, puissances célestes : où trouver un pareil amour? Qui de vous consent à se rendre mortel, pour racheter la mort qu'a méritée le crime de l'homme? Où est le juste qui sauvera l'injuste? Est-il une aussi tendre charité dans toute l'étendue des cieux?

Il dit. Un profond silence règne dans l'empyrée, et les chœurs célestes restent muets. Nul protecteur, nul intercesseur en faveur de l'homme, encore moins d'ami qui ose lui servir de rançon et détourner sur sa tête l'accablante punition du crime. Ainsi, privé de rédempteur, tout le genre humain eût été perdu, livré par un arrêt sévère à la mort et aux enfers, si le Fils de Dieu, en qui réside la plénitude de l'amour divin, n'eût repris en ces termes sa précieuse méditation :

O mon Père! ta parole est donnée : l'homme trouvera grâce. Mais cette grâce, la plus rapide de tes messagères ailées, qui pénètre en tous lieux, qui prévient le désir, les vœux et les prières, n'ira-t-elle pas au-devant de lui? Heu-

And to the end persisting, safe arrive.
This my long suff'rance, and my day of grace,
They who neglect and scorn shall never taste;
But hard be harden'd; blind be blinded more,
That they may stumble on, and deeper fall:
And none but such from mercy I exclude.
But yet all is not done; man disobeying,
Disloyal breaks his fealty, and sins
Against the high supremacy of heav'n,
Affecting godhead, and so losing all,
To expiate his treason hath nought left;
But to destruction, sacred and devote,
He, with his whole posterity, must die.
Die he or justice must; unless for him
Some other able, and as willing, pay
The rigid satisfaction, death for death.
Say, heav'nly pow'rs where shall we find such love?
Which of ye will be mortal to redeem
Man's mortal crime, and just th' unjust to save?
Dwells in all heaven charity so dear?
He ask'd; but all the heav'nly quire stood mute,
And silence was in heav'n: on man's behalf
Patron or intercessor none appear'd,
Much less that durst upon his own head draw
The deadly forfeiture, and ransom set.
And now without redemption all mankind
Must have been lost, adjudg'd to death and hell
By doom severe, had not the Son of God,
In whom the fulness dwells of love divine,
His dearest mediation thus renew'd:
Father, thy word is past, man shall find grace;
And shall grace not find means, that finds her way,
The speediest of thy winged messengers,
To visit all thy creatures, and to all

reux l'homme, s'il recevait cette faveur! Il ne peut aller chercher son secours, du fond de l'abîme où l'a plongé le péché; et, dans son dénuement et sa misère, il n'a ni expiation ni offrande à présenter. Eh bien! me voici pour lui; voilà ma vie pour sa vie; lance ta colère sur moi: c'est moi qui prends la place de l'homme. Je quitterai ton sein; je dépouillerai librement cette gloire qui ne cède qu'à la tienne, et je donnerai sans regret ma vie pour le sauver. Que la Mort décharge toute sa fureur sur ma tête. Je ne languirai pas long-temps sous le joug de sa noire puissance. C'est par toi que je possède pour toujours la vie en moi-même: c'est pour toi que je vis, et je paierai ce que la Mort réclame en lui livrant tout ce qui peut périr en moi. Cette dette acquittée, tu ne m'abandonneras pas à sa voracité dans l'horrible tombeau; tu ne souffriras pas que mon ame sans tache demeure éternellement avec la corruption. Je me leverai victorieux; je subjuguerai mon vainqueur; il sera dépouillé de son orgueilleux butin; la Mort se frappera de sa propre main; et, désarmée de son dard destructeur, elle sera renversée dans l'oubli. Cependant je traverserai les airs en triomphe, traînant à ma suite l'enfer captif, en dépit de l'enfer, et les princes des ténèbres chargés de fers. A ce spectacle, tu souriras du haut des cieux; tu me verras d'une œil satisfait, relevé par ta main, anéantir tous mes ennemis et triompher enfin de la Mort qui, de son énorme cadavre, rassasiera le tombeau. Alors, entouré de la multitude que j'aurai rachetée, je rentrerai dans les cieux après une longue absence; j'y reviendrai, ô mon Père! contempler ton visage, que n'obscurciront plus les nuages de la vengeance, mais où brillera le doux éclat de la réconciliation et de la paix. La colère disparaîtra sans retour: une joie parfaite régnera en ta présence.

Comes unprevented, unimplor'd, unsought?
Happy for man, so coming: he her aid
Can never seek, once dead in sins, and lost;
Atonement for himself, or offering meet,
Indebted and undone, hath none to bring.
Behold me then; me for him, life for life
I offer; on me let thine anger fall;
Account me man; I for his sake will leave
Thy bosom, and this glory next to thee
Freely put off, and for him lastly die
Well pleas'd: on me let Death wreak all his rage:
Under his gloomy pow'r I shall not long
Lie vanquish'd; thou hast giv'n me to possess
Life in myself for ever; by thee I live,
Though now to Death I yield, and am his due,
All that of me can die; yet that debt paid,
Thou wilt not leave me in the loathsome grave
His prey, nor suffer my unspotted soul
For ever with corruption there to dwell;
But I shall rise victorious, and subdue
My vanquisher, spoil'd of his vaunted spoil;
Death his death's wound shall then receive, and stoop
Inglorious, of his mortal sting disarm'd.
I through the ample air, in triumph high
Shall lead hell captive, maugre hell, and show
The pow'rs of darkness bound. Thou at the sight
Pleas'd, out of heaven shalt look down, and smile;
While, by thee rais'd, I ruin all my foes,
Death last, and with his carcass glut the grave:
Then, with the multitude of my redeem'd
Shall enter heav'n, long absent, and return,
Father, to see thy face, wherein no cloud
Of anger shall remain, but peace assur'd,
And reconcilement; wrath shall be no more
Thenceforth, but in thy presence joy entire.

MACBETH.

ACTE PREMIER.

SCÈNE I. — *Une plaine en Écosse.*

Tonnerre, éclairs.

Trois SORCIÈRES *paraissent.*

1re *Sor.* Quand nous réunirons-nous de nouveau, toutes trois? choisirons-nous un jour de tonnerre, d'éclairs ou de pluie?

2e *Sor.* Quand tout ce tumulte aura cessé, et que la bataille sera perdue ou gagnée.

3e *Sor.* Ce sera avant le coucher du soleil.

1re *Sor.* En quel endroit?

2e *Sor.* Sur la bruyère.

3e *Sor.* Pour y rencontrer Macbeth.

(*On entend un chat.*)

1re *Sor.* Je viens, Graymalkin.

(*On entend un crapaud.*)

2e *Sor.* Paddock nous appelle.

1re *Sor.* Tout à l'heure.

Toutes 3. Le beau est horrible; l'horrible est beau: prenons l'essor à travers les brouillards impurs.

(*Tonnerre, éclairs. — Elles disparaissent.*)

MACBETH.

ACT THE FIRST.

SCENE I.—*The open Country.*

Thunder and Lightning.

Three WITCHES *discovered.*

1 *Witch.* When shall we three meet again
In thunder, ligthning, or in rain?

2 *Witch.* When the hurly-burly's done,
When the battle's lost and won.

3 *Witch.* That will be ere th' set of sun.

1 *Witch.* Where the place?

2 *Witch.* Upon the heath.

3 *Witch.* There to meet with Macbeth.

(*Noise of a Cat.*

1 *Witch.* I come, Gray-malkin. (*Noise of a Toad.*

2 *Witch.* Paddock calls.

1 *Witch.* Anon.

All. Fair is foul, and foul is fair:
Hover through the fog and filthy air.

(*Thunder and Lightning.—Exeunt severally.*

SCÈNE II. — *Le Palais à Fores.*

Fanfares et roulemens de tambours.

LE ROI DUNCAN *entre avec* MALCOLM, DONALBAIN, LENOX, ROSSE, *et deux* CHAMBELLANS.

(*On voit arriver un* OFFICIER *couvert de sang.*)

Le Roi. Quel est cet homme tout sanglant? S'il faut en juger par son état, il pourra nous dire où en est actuellement la révolte.

Mal. C'est le sergent qui a combattu en bon et intrépide soldat, pour me sauver de la captivité. — Salut, mon brave ami; dis au roi ce que tu sais de la mêlée, et en quel état tu l'as laissée.

L'Off. La victoire resta long-temps incertaine; ainsi, deux nageurs s'épuisent à se surpasser l'un l'autre, et chacun d'eux cherche à effacer le talent de son rival. L'impitoyable Macdowald avait reçu des îles de l'Ouest un renfort de Kernes et de Gallow-Glasses; et la fortune, souriant à cette cause maudite, semblait vouloir s'abandonner à un rebelle. Mais tant de forces réunies se sont trouvées trop faibles encore. Le brave Macbeth (il a bien mérité ce titre), méprisant la fortune, en vrai favori de la valeur, s'est frayé un passage, brandissant son épée que faisait fumer le sang des révoltés; il s'est arrêté en face du traître; il l'a poursuivi sans relâche, et il ne l'a quitté qu'après l'avoir fendu de la bouche au ventre. La tête du rebelle est placée sur nos créneaux.

Le Roi. O mon vaillant cousin! digne et brave guerrier!

L'Off. Écoute, roi d'Écosse, écoute. A peine la Justice, armée du bras de la valeur, avait forcé les véloces Kernes

SCENE II. — *The Palace at Fores.*

Flourish of Trumpets and Drums.

Enter KING DUNCAN, MALCOLM, DONALBAIN, LENOX, ROSSE, *and two* CHAMBERLAINS, *meeting a bleeding* OFFICER.

King. What bloody man is that? He can report,
As seemeth by his plight, of the revolt
The newest state.

Mal. This is the sergeant,
Who, like a good aud hardy soldier, fought
'Gainst my captivity.—Hail, brave friend!
Say to the king the knowledge of the broil,
As thou didst leave it

Off. Doubtfully it stood;
As two spent swimmers, that do cling together,
And choke their art. The merciless Macdowald
From the western isles
Of Kernes and Gallow-glasses is supply'd;
And fortune, on his damned quarrel smiling,
Show'd like a rebel's whore: But all's too weak:
For brave Macbeth (well he deserves that name,)
Disdaining fortune, with his brandish'd steel,
Which smoked with bloody execution,
Like valour's minion,
Carved out his passage, till he faced the slave;
And ne'er shook hands, nor bade farewell to him,
Till he unseam'd him from the nave to the chaps,
And fix'd his head upon our battlements.

King. O, valiant cousin! worthy gentleman!

Off. Mark, king of Scotland, mark:
No sooner justice had, with valour arm'd,

à chercher leur salut dans la fuite, que le chef des Norwégiens, saisissant l'avantage avec des troupes fraîches et des armes encore resplendissantes, recommença l'attaque.

Le Roi. Cela n'a-t-il pas épouvanté nos généraux, Macbeth et Banquo?

L'Off. Oui, comme le passereau effraie les aigles; comme le lièvre effraie le lion. — Mais je me sens affaiblir; mes blessures crient au secours.

Le Roi. Tes paroles te vont aussi bien que tes blessures. L'honneur y respire partout. — Allez, qu'on lui amène des chirurgiens.

(L'OFFICIER *sort accompagné des deux* CHAMBELLANS.)

Qui s'approche de nous?

Mal. C'est le digne thane de Fife.

Len. Quel empressement est peint dans ses yeux!

Rosse. A le voir, il aurait à nous annoncer d'étranges nouvelles.

MACDUFF *entre.*

Macd. Dieu conserve le roi!

Le Roi. D'où viens-tu, digne thane?

Macd. De Fife, grand roi, où les bannières norwégiennes insultent les cieux et glacent nos habitans. Norway, lui-même, avec des forces terribles, secondé par le plus déloyal des traîtres, le thane de Cawdor, avait engagé un combat funeste, lorsque le jeune époux de Bellone, cuirassé de ses exploits, l'appelle au combat singulier; il oppose son fer au fer rebelle, son bras au bras norwégien; il dompte cette vaine audace; et enfin la victoire nous reste.

Le Roi. O bonheur!

Macd. Maintenant, Suénon, roi de Norwège, demande

Compell'd these skipping Kernes to trust their heels,
But the Norweyan lord, surveying'vantage,
With furbish'd arms, and new supplies of men,
Began a fresh assault.
King. Dismay'd not this
Our captains, Macbeth and Banquo?
Off. Yes;
As sparrows, eagles; or the hare, the lion.—
But I am faint; my gashes cry for help.
King. So well thy words become thee, as thy wounds;
They smack of honour both: — Go, get him surgeons.
(*Exeunt* Officer *and two* Chamberlains.

Who comes here?
Mal. The worthy thane of Fife.
Len. What a haste looks through his eyes!
Rosse. So should he look,
That seems to speak things strange.

Enter Macduff.

Macd. God save the king!
King. Whence camest thou, worthy thane?
Macd. From Fife, great king,
Where the Norweyan banners flout the sky,
And fan our people cold.
Norway himself, with terrible numbers,
Assisted by that most disloyal traitor
The thane of Cawdor, 'gan a dismal conflict:
Till that Bellona's bridegroom, lapp'd in proof,
Confronted him with self-comparisons,
Point against point rebellious, arm'gainst arm,
Curbing his lavish spirit: And, to conclude,
The victory fell on us; —
Klng. Great happiness!
Macd. That now

à négocier. Nous n'avons pas daigné lui permettre d'enterrer ses morts, qu'il n'eût d'abord déposé à Saint-Colmes-Inch dix mille dollars pour notre usage.

Le Roi. Le thane de Cawdor ne trahira pas plus longtemps nos intérêts et notre confiance; allez ordonner sa mort sur-le-champ, et transmettre son titre à Macbeth.

Macd. Je veillerai à l'exécution de vos ordres.

(MACDUFF *et* LENOX *sortent.*)

Le Roi. Ce qu'il a perdu, le brave Macbeth l'a gagné.

(*Fanfares, roulement de tambours. — Tous sortent.*)

SCÈNE III. — *Une bruyère.*

Tonnerre, éclairs.

Les trois SORCIÈRES *entrent*

1 *Sor.* Où as-tu été, ma sœur ?

2 *Sor.* Tuer le pouceau.

3 *Sor.* Et toi, ma sœur?

1 *Sor.* La femme d'un matelot avait des châtaignes dans son tablier; elle mâchonnait, mâchonnait, mâchonnait. — « Donne-m'en, » lui ai-je dit. — « Va-t-en au diable, sorcière, » m'a répondu cette grosse mégère à la croupe rebondie. — Son mari est parti pour Alep, comme patron du *Tigre;* mais je m'embarquerai après lui dans un tamis, et, sous la forme d'un rat sans queue, je ferai, je ferai, je ferai.....

2 *Sor.* Je te donnerai un vent.

1 *Sor.* Tu es bien obligeante.

3 *Sor.* Et moi un autre.

1 *Sor.* Et moi, je dispose de tous les autres, des ports vers lesquels ils soufflent, et de tous les endroits marqués

Sweno, the Norway' sking, craves composition;
Nor would we deign him burial of his men,
Till he disbursed, at St Colme's Inch,
Ten thousand dollars to our general use.
King. No more that thane of Cawdor shall deceive
Our bosom interest; — Go, pronounce his present death,
And with his former titles greet Macbeth.
Macd. I'll see it done.
(*Exeunt* MACDUFF *and* LENOX.
King. What he hath lost, noble Macbeth hath won.
(*Flourish of trumpets and Drums.— Exeunt*

SCENE III. — *A Heath.*

Thunder and Lightning.

Enter the Three WITCHES.

1 *Witch.* Where hast thou been, sister?
2 *Witch.* Killing swine.
3 *Witch.* Sister, where thou?
1 *Witch.* A sailor's wife had chesnuts in her lap,
And mouncht, and mouncht, and moucht: —
« Give me, » quoth I.
« Aroint thee, witch! » the rump-fed ronyon cries.
Her husband's to Aleppo gone, master o'the *Tiger;*
But in a sieve I'll thither sail,
And like a rat without a tail,
I'll do, I'll do, and I'll do.
2 *Witch.* I'll give thee a wind.
3 *Witch.* And I another.
1 *Witch.* Thou art kind.
1 *Witch.* I myself have all the other;
And the very ports they blow,
All the quarters that they know

sur la carte des marins. Je le rendrai sec comme du foin; le sommeil ne lui fermera ni jour ni nuit le rideau des paupières; il vivra comme un proscrit; neuf fois neuf nuits de fatigue le feront maigrir, s'exténuer, languir; et si sa barque ne peut périr, du moins sera-t-elle battue par la tempête.— Voyez ce que j'ai là.

2 *Sor.* Montre-moi, montre-moi.

1 *Sor.* C'est le pouce d'un pilote qui a fait naufrage en revenant dans son pays.

(*Une marche dans le lointain.*)

3 *Sor.* Le tambour, le tambour; Macbeth arrive.

Toutes trois. Les sœurs du Destin, les mains entrelacées, vont parcourant les mers et la terre; elles tournent, tournent.

2 *Sor.* Trois fois pour le tien.

3 *Sor.* Et trois fois pour le mien.

1 *Sor.* Et trois fois encore.

Toutes trois. Pour compléter le nombre de neuf.

1 *Sor.* Paix! — Le charme est accompli.

MACBETH *et* BANQUO *entrent; officiers et soldats.*

Macb. Commandez une halte sur cette bruyère.

(*Dans la coulisse.*) Halte! halte! halte!

Macb. Je n'ai jamais vu de jour si affreux et si beau.

Ban. Combien dit-on qu'il y a d'ici à Fores? — Quelles sont ces créatures si décharnées, et vêtues d'une manière si bizarre, qu'elles ne semblent pas appartenir aux habitans de la terre? Elles y sont pourtant!—Êtes-vous en vie? Êtes-vous des êtres que l'homme puisse interroger? Vous sem-

I' the shipman's card.
I will drain him dry as hay :
Sleep shall, neither night nor day,
Hang upon his pent-house lid;
He shall live a man forbid:
Weary seven nights, nine times nine,
Shall he dwindle, peak, and pine :
Though his bark cannot be lost,
Yet it shall be tempest-tost. —
Look what I have.

2 *Witch.* Show me, show me.

1 *Witch.* Here I have a pilot's thumb,
Wreck'd, as homeward he did come.

(*A March at a Distance*

3 *Witch.* A drum, a drum;
Macbeth doth come.

All. The weird sisters, and in hand,
Posters of the sea and land,
Thus do go about, about.

2 *Witch.* Thrice to thine,—

3 *Witch.* And thrice to mine,—

1 *Wirch.* And thrice again,—

All. To make up nine.

1 *Witch.* Peace; — the charm's wound up.

Enter Macbeth, Banquo, *and the Army.*

Macb. Command they make a halt upon the heath. (*Within.*) Halt, — halt, — halt.

Macb. So foul and fair a day I have not seen.

Ban. How far is't called to Fores? — Wath are these
So wither'd and so wild in ther attire,
That look not like the inhabitans o' the earth,
And yet are on't? — Live you? or are you aught
That man may question? You seem to understand me,

blez me comprendre, au signe que vous faites ensemble, en plaçant votre doigt décharné sur vos lèvres flétries : je vous prendrais pour des femmes, si votre barbe ne m'empêchait de croire que vous l'êtes en effet.

Macb. Parlez, si vous le pouvez. — Qui êtes-vous ?

1 *Sor.* Salut, Macbeth ! salut, à toi, thane de Glamis !

2 *Sor.* Salut, Macbeth ? salut, à toi, thane de Cawdor !

3 *Sor.* Salut, Macbeth ! qui un jour seras roi !

Ban. Seigneur, pourquoi tressaillir ? pourquoi semblez-vous craindre des choses dont l'annonce doit être si agréable ? — Au nom de la vérité, êtes-vous des fantômes, ou bien êtes-vous réellement ce que vous paraissez être ? Vous saluez mon noble compagnon, d'un titre nouveau, de la haute prédiction d'une illustre fortune, et de royales espérances : il en est comme hors de lui ; et moi, vous ne me parlez pas : si vous pouvez démêler, dans les germes du temps, les semences qui doivent s'élever sur la terre, et celles qui doivent avorter, dites-le moi donc, à moi, qui ne sollicite ni ne redoute vos faveurs, ni votre haine.

1 *Sor.* Salut !

2 *Sor.* Salut !

3 *Sor.* Salut !

1 *Sor.* Moindre que Macbeth, et plus grand que lui !

2 *Sor.* Pas si heureux, et cependant bien plus heureux !

3 *Sor.* De toi naîtront des rois, quoique tu ne sois pas roi.

Toutes trois. Ainsi, salut, Macbeth et Banquo ! Banquo et Macbeth, salut ! (*Elles s'éloignent.*)

Macb. Demeurez, vous dont les discours sont imparfaits ; dites-m'en davantage. Je sais que, par la mort de Sinel, je suis thane de Glamis ; mais comment le serai-je de Cawdor ? Le thane de Cawdor est vivant, il prospère : et devenir roi n'est pas une perspective que je puisse renfermer dans les

By each at once her choppy finger laying
Upon her skinny lips: You should be women,
And yet your beards forbid me to interpret
That you are so.

Macb. Speak, if ye can: — What are you?

1 *Witch.* All hail, Macbeth! hail to thee, thane of Glamis!

2 *Witch.* All hail, Macbeth! hail to thee, thane of Cawdor!

3 *Witch.* All hail, Macbeth! that shall be king hereafter.

Ban. Good sir, why do you start, and seem to fear
Things that do sound so fair? — I' the name of truth,
Are ye fantastical, or that indeed,
Which outwardly ye show? My noble partner
You greet with present grace, and great prediction
Of noble having, and of royal hope,
That he seems wrapt withal: to me you speak not:
If you can look into the seeds of time,
And say, which grain will grow, and which will not;
Speak then to me, who neither beg, nor fear,
Your favours; nor your hate.

1 *Witch.* Hail!

2 *Witch.* Hail!

3 *Witch.* Hail!

1 *Wich.* Lesser than Macbeth, and greater.

2 *Witch.* Not so happy, yet much happier.

3 *Witch.* Thou shalt get kings, though thou be none.

All. So, all hail, Macbeth and Banquo!
Banquo and Macbeth, all hail! (*Going.*)

Macb. Stay, — you imperfect speakers, tell me more:
By Sinel's death, I know I am thane of Glamis.
But how of Cawdor? the thane of Cawdor lives,
A prosperous gentleman; and, to be king,
Stands not within the prospect of belief,

bornes de ma croyance, pas plus que de devenir thane de Cawdor? Parlez, d'où tenez-vous ces étranges nouvelles? et pourquoi arrêtez-vous nos pas sur cette aride bruyère par vos saluts prophétiques?

(*Tonnerre*, *éclairs.* — *Les* SORCIÈRES *disparaissent.*)

Parlez, je vous somme de me répondre.

Ban. Il s'élève de la terre, comme de l'eau, des bulles d'air : c'est là ce que nous avons vu. — Où sont-elles évanouies?

Macb. Dans l'air; et ce qui paraissait un corps s'est dissipé comme l'haleine dans les vents. — Que ne sont-elles demeurées plus long-temps!

Ban. Avons-nous vu réellement ici ces choses dont nous parlons, ou bien aurions-nous mangé de cette perfide racine qui enchaîne la raison?

Macb. Vos enfans seront rois.

Ban. Vous serez roi.

Macb. Et thane de Cawdor aussi; n'est-ce pas ce qui a été dit?

Ban. Mot pour mot. — Qui vient ici?

LENOX *et* MACDUFF *entrent.*

Macd. Le roi a reçu avec joie, Macbeth, la nouvelle de tes succès; en apprenant tes exploits dans le combat contre les rebelles, l'étonnement qu'il éprouvait et les éloges qui te sont dus se disputaient pour savoir ce qui lui resterait ou t'appartiendrait. Réduit par là au silence, en parcourant les événemens du même jour, il t'a trouvé au milieu des bataillons de l'audacieux Norwégien, sans effroi, entouré de ces terribles images de mort dues à ta propre main. Aussi rapides que la parole, les courriers se succédaient : chacun d'eux apportait et répétait devant lui les nouveaux éloges que tu mérites pour cette brillante défense de son royaume.

No more than thn to be Cawdor. Say, from whence
You owe this strange intelligence? or why
Upon this blasted heath you stop our way
With such prophetic greeting?

(*Thunder and Lightning.* — WITCHES *vanish.*

Speak, I charge you.

Ban. The earth bubbles, as the water has,
And these are of them : — Whither are they vanish'd?

Macb. Into the air; and what seem'd corporal melted
As breath into the wind. — 'Would they had staid!

Ban. Were such things here, as we do speak about?
Or have we eaten of the insane root,
That takes the reason prisoner?

Macb. Your children shall be kings.

Ban. You shall be king.

Macb. And thane of Cawdor too; went it not so?

Ban. To the self-same tune and words. — Who's here?

Enter MACDUFF *and* LENOX.

Macd. The king hath happily received, Macbeth,
The news of thy success : and, when he reads
Thy personal venture in the rebels' fight,
Which should be thine or his : Silenced with that,
In viewing o'er the rest o' the self-same day,
He finds thee in the stout Norweyau ranks,
Nothing afeard of what thyself didst make,
Strange images of death. As thick as tale,
Came post with post; and every one did bear
Thy praises in his kingdom's great defence,
And pour'd them down before him.

Len. Nous sommes envoyés pour te porter les remerciemens de notre royal maître : nous sommes chargés de te conduire près de lui, mais non de te récompenser.

Macd. Et, pour gage de plus grands honneurs, il m'a ordonné de te saluer, de sa part, comme thane de Cawdor. Ainsi, digne thane, salut sous ce nouveau titre! car il est à toi.

Ban. (*à part*) Quoi! Le démon a dit vrai?

Macb. Le thane de Cawdor est vivant; pourquoi me revêtir de parures empruntées?

Macd. Celui qui fut le thane vit encore; mais, sous le poids d'un jugement, il ne tient plus qu'à une existence dont il a mérité d'être privé. Des trahisons capitales, avouées et prouvées, l'ont perdu sans retour.

Macb. Thane de Glamis et thane de Cawdor! le plus grand manque encore! — Je vous remercie de vos soins. —N'espérez-vous pas à présent que vos enfans seront rois, puisque celles qui m'ont salué thane de Cawdor ne leur ont pas promis moins qu'une couronne?

Ban. Si vous y croyez de bonne foi, cela pourrait bien aussi vous faire espérer le trône, outre le titre de thane de Cawdor; mais c'est une affaire étrange. Souvent, pour nous mener à notre perte, les ministres des ténèbres nous disent la vérité; ils nous présentent l'amorce de bagatelles permises, pour nous entraîner ensuite dans les plus funestes engagemens. — Mes cousins, un mot, je vous prie.

Macb. Deux vérités m'ont été dites, comme de favorables prologues de la scène royale qui s'approche. — Je vous rends grâce, messieurs. — Cette instigation surnaturelle ne peut être criminelle; elle ne peut pas non plus être innocente. Si elle est criminelle, pourquoi me donne-t-elle un gage de succès en commençant par une réalité? Je suis

Len. We are sent
To give thee, from our royal master, thanks;
Only to herald thee into his sight,
Not pay thee.
Macd. And, for an earnest of a greater honour,
He bade me, from him, call thee thane of Cawdor:
In which addition, hail, most worthy thane!
For it is thine.
Ban. What! can the devil speak true? (*Aside.*
Macb. The thane of Cawdor lives; why do you dress me
In borrow'd robes?
Macd. Who was the thane, lives yet;
But under heavy judgment bears that life,
Which he deserves to lose;
For treasons capital, confess'd, and proved,
Have overthrown him.
Macb. Glamis, and thane of Cawdor:
The greatest is behind. — Thanks for your pains. —
Do you not hope your children shall be kings,
When those, that gave the thane of Cawder to me,
Promised no less to them?
Ban. That, trusted home,
Might yet enkindle you unto the crown,
Besides the thane of Cawdor. But, 'tis strange:
And oftentimes, to win us to our harm,
The instruments of darkness tell us truths;
Win us with honest trifles to betray us
In deepest consequence. — Cousins, a word, I pray you.
Macb. Two truths are told,
As happy prologues to the swelling act
Of the imperial theme. — I thank you, gentlemen. —
This supernatural soliciting
Cannot be ill; cannot be good. — If ill,
Why hath it given me earnest of success,

thane de Cawdor. Si elle est innocente, d'où vient que, malgré moi, je me sens entraîné à de telles actions, qu'à leur épouvantable image mes cheveux se dressent, et mon cœur, retenu à sa place, frappe mes côtes, rebelle aux lois de la nature? Les actes même seraient moins effrayans que ces horribles idées. Ma pensée, où le meurtre n'est encore qu'une vision fantastique, ébranle tellement mon être, que toutes les fonctions humaines en sont anéanties. Rien n'y existe que ce qui n'est pas.

Ban. Voyez comme notre ami est plongé dans ses rêveries.

Macb. Si le hasard veut me faire roi, soit; le hasard peut me couronner sans que je m'en mêle.

Ban. Ces nouveaux honneurs lui vont comme des habits neufs qui ne se moulent bien sur sa taille qu'après un peu d'usage.

Macb. Arrive ce qu'il pourra; le temps et les heures avancent également à travers la plus rude journée.

Ban. Cher Macbeth, nous sommes à vos ordres.

Macb. Soyez assez bons pour m'excuser; mon cerveau insensé travaillait à retrouver des choses oubliées. Mes chers messieurs, vos services sont consignés dans un registre que chaque jour je feuilleterai pour les lire. — Allons trouver le roi. Réfléchissez à ce qui est arrivé; et plus à loisir, après avoir dans l'intervalle pesé toutes les circonstances, nous en parlerons à cœur ouvert.

Ban. Très-volontiers.

Macb. Jusque-là, silence! — Allons, mes amis.

(*Une marche. — Ils sortent.*)

Commencing in a truth? I am thane of Cawdor.
If good, why do I yield to that suggestion
Whose horrid image doth unfix my hair,
And make my seated heart knock at my ribs,
Against the use of nature? Present fears
Are less than horrible imaginings:
My thought, whose murder yet is but fantastical,
Shakes so my single state of man, that function
Is smother'd in surmise; and nothing is,
But what is not.

Ban. Look, how our partner's rapt.

Macb. If chance wil have me king, why, chance may crown me
Without my stir.

Ban. New honours come upon him,
Like our strange garments, cleave not to their mould,
But with the aid of use.

Macb. Come what come may,
Time and the hour runs through the roughest day.

Ban. Worthy Macbeth, we stay upon your leisure.

Macb. Give me your favour: — my dull brain was wrought
With things forgotten. Kind gentlemen, your pains
Are register'd where every day I turn
The leaf to read them. — Let us toward the king. —
Think upon what hath chanced; and, at more time,
The interim having weigh'd it, let us speak
Our free hearts each to other.

Ban. Very gladly.

Macb. Till then, enough. — Come, friends.

(*March. —Exeunt.*

SCÈNE IV. — *Le palais à Fores.*

Fanfares et roulement de tambours.

LE ROI DUNCAN, DONALBAIN, MALCOLM, ROSSE, *et deux* CHAMBELLANS *entrent.*

Le Roi. A-t-on exécuté Cawdor? Ceux qui en étaient chargés ne sont-ils pas revenus?

Rosse. Mon souverain, ils ne sont pas encore de retour.

Mal. Mais moi, j'ai parlé à un homme qui l'a vu mourir: il m'a rapporté que le thane avait franchement avoué sa trahison; qu'il implorait le pardon de votre majesté, et qu'il manifestait un profond repentir. Rien dans sa vie n'est aussi honorable que la manière dont il l'a quittée. Il est mort en homme qui s'est étudié, en mourant, à laisser échapper, comme une bagatelle sans importance, le plus cher de ses biens.

Le Roi. Il n'est point d'art qui apprenne à lire sur le visage les inclinations de l'ame; c'était un homme en qui j'avais une confiance illimitée.

MACDUFF, MACBETH, BANQUO *et* LENOX *entrent.*

O mon très-cher cousin! Je sentais déjà peser sur moi le reproche d'ingratitude. Tu as marché si rapidement en avant que la plus prompte récompense a été trop lente pour t'atteindre. — Je voudrais que tu eusses mérité moins, et qu'il eût été en mon pouvoir de mesurer mieux ton salaire et ma reconnaissance. Il me reste seulement à te dire qu'il t'est dû plus qu'on ne peut jamais acquitter.

SCENE IV. — *The Palace at Fores.*

Flourish of Trumpets and Drums.

Enter KING DUNCAN, DONALBAIN, MALCOLM, ROSSE, *and two* CHAMBERLAINS.

King. Is execution done on Cawdor? Are not
Those in commission yet return'd?
Rosse. My liege,
They are not yet come back.
Mal. But I have spoke
With one that saw him die: who did report
That very frankly he confess'd his treasons;
Implored your highness' pardon; and set forth
A deep repentance: nothing in his life
Became him, like the leaving it; he died
As one that had been studied in his death,
To throw away the dearest thing he owed,
As'twere a careless trifle.
King. There's no art,
To find the mind's construction in the face:
He was a gentleman on whom I built
An absolute trust. —

Enter MACDUFF, MACBETH, BANQUO, *and* LENOX.

O, worthiest cousin!
The sin of my ingratitude even now
Was heavy on me: Thou art so far before,
That swiftest wing of recompence is slow
To overtake thee. 'Would thou hadst less deserved,
That the proportion, both of thanks and payment,
Might have been mine! only I have left to say,
More is thy due than more than all can pay.

Macb. Le service et la fidélité que je vous dois se récompensent eux-mêmes en se montrant. Il appartient à votre grandeur de recevoir le tribut de nos devoirs ; et nos devoirs nous lient à votre trône et à votre état, comme des enfans et des serviteurs qui ne font que ce qu'ils doivent, en faisant tout ce qui peut mériter votre affection et votre estime.

Le Roi. Sois ici le bien-venu : je viens de te planter comme un jeune arbrisseau, et je travaillerai à te faire parvenir à la plus haute croissance. Noble Banquo, tu n'as pas moins mérité ; je déclare que tu n'as pas moins fait. Laisse-moi t'embrasser et te presser sur mon cœur.

Ban. Si j'y prends jamais racine, les fruits vous appartiendront.

Le Roi. Tant de joies réunies, prêtes à déborder par leur plénitude, cherchent à se voiler des pleurs de la tristesse. — Mes fils, mes parens, vous, thanes, et vous qui, par votre rang, les suivez de près, apprenez que nous voulons transmettre notre couronne à Malcolm, l'aîné de nos enfans ; il portera désormais le nom de prince de Cumberland. Mais il ne sera pas seul comblé d'honneurs : des distinctions nouvelles brilleront comme autant d'étoiles sur ceux qui les ont méritées. — Partons pour Inverness ; je veux contracter de nouvelles obligations envers vous.

Macb. Le repos devient fatigue pour moi, si je ne vous le consacre pas. Je veux vous annoncer moi-même, et combler ma femme de joie par la nouvelle de votre arrivée ; ainsi je prends humblement congé de vous.

Le Roi. Mon digne Cawdor !

Macb. (*à part.*) Le prince de Cumberland ! — Voilà un obstacle qui me fera faire un faux pas, si je ne le franchis point d'abord ; car il se trouve au milieu de mon chemin. Étoiles, cachez vos feux ! que la lumière ne puisse voir mes profonds et sombres désirs : que l'œil se ferme au mouve-

Macb. The service and the loyalty I owe,
In doing it, pays itself. Your highness' part
Is to receive our duties: and our duties
Are to your throne and state, children, and servants;
Which do but what they should, by doing every thing
Safe toward your love and honour.
King. Welcome hither:
I have begun to plant thee, and will labour
To make thee full of growing. — Noble Banquo,
That hast no less deserved, nor must be known
No less to have done so, let me enfold thee,
And hold thee to my heart.
Ban. There if I grow,
The harvest is your own.
King. My plenteous joys,
Wanton in fulness, seek to hide themselves
In drops of sorrow. — Sons, kinsmen, thanes,
And you, whose places are the nearest, know,
We will establish our estate upon
Our eldest, Malcolm; whom we name hereafter,
The Prince of Cumberland: which honour must
Not, unaccompanied, invest him only,
But signs of nobleness, like stars, shall shine
On all deservers. — From hence to Inverness,
And bind us furter tho you.
Macb. The rest is labour, which is not used for you:
I'll be myself the harbinger, and make joyful
The hearing of my wife with your approach;
So, humbly take my leave..
King. My worthy Cawdor!
Macb. The prince of Cumberland! — That is a step,
On which I must fall down, or else o'erleap,
For in my way it lies. (*Aside.* Stars, hide your fires!
Let not light see my black and deep desires:

ment de la main ! Mais qu'il s'accomplisse, l'acte que mes yeux redoutent de voir exécuté!

(Macbeth *sort.*)

Le Roi. En effet, digne Banquo, il est aussi vaillant que vous le dites : mon ame se repaît des éloges qu'on donne à Macbeth; c'est une fête pour moi. Suivons-le, tandis que ses soins nous devancent pour nous assurer un bon accueil. — C'est un allié sans égal.

(*Fanfares et roulement de tambours. — Ils sortent.*)

SCÈNE V. — *Le château de* Macbeth, *à Inverness.*

Lady Macbeth *entre, en lisant une lettre.*

Lady M. *Elles sont venues à moi au jour de mon triomphe ; et j'ai reconnu, par le plus incontestable témoignage, qu'elles avaient une intelligence plus qu'humaine. Lorsque je brûlais de leur adresser d'autres questions, elles se sont dissipées en vapeur, et ont disparu dans l'air. Tandis que je restais éperdu de surprise, des envoyés du roi sont venus me saluer* thane de Cawdor. *C'était sous ce titre, que les sœurs du Destin m'avaient d'abord parlé, me renvoyant aux événemens à venir par ces mots :* Salut, toi qui seras roi ! — *J'ai cru qu'il était bon de t'en instruire, chère compagne de ma grandeur ; je n'ai pas voulu te priver de ta portion de joie, en te laissant ignorer les grandes destinées qui te sont promises. Garde ceci dans ton cœur. Adieu.*

Tu es thane de Glamis et de Cawdor ; tu seras aussi ce qu'on t'a prédit. Cependant, je crains ton naturel : il est trop nourri du lait de l'humanité, pour te laisser prendre le chemin le plus court : tu voudras bien t'agrandir, tu n'es pas sans ambition, mais tu manques de la scélératesse qui

The eye wink at the hand! yet let that be,
Which the eye fears, when it is done, to see.

(*Exit* Macbecth.

King. True, worthy Banquo; he is full so valiant:
And in his commendations I am fed;
It is a banquet to me. Let us after him,
Whose care is gone before to bid us welcome;
It is a peerless kinsman.

(*Flourish of Trumpets and Drums.* — *Exeunt.*

SCENE V. — Macbeth's *Castle*, *at Inverness.*

Enter Lady Macbeth, *reading a Letter.*

Lady M. — *They met me in the day of success; and I have learned by the perfectest report; they have more in them than mortal knowledge. When I burned in desire to question them farther, they made themselves — air, into which they vanished. Whiles I stood rapt in the wonder of it, came missives from the king, who all hail'd me,* Thane of Cawdor; *by which title, before, these weird sisters saluted me, and referr'd me to the coming on of time, with* Hail, king that shalt be! *This have I thought good to deliver thee, my dearest partner of greatness, that thou mightest not lose the dues of rejoicing, by being ignorant of what greatness is promised thee. Lay it to thy heart, and farewell.*

Glamis thou art, and Cawdor; and shalt be
What thou art promised: —Yet do I fear thy nature:
It is too full o' the milk of human kindness,
To catch the nearest way: Thou would'st be great:
Art not without ambition; but without
The illness should attend it. What thou would'st highly,

doit l'accompagner : ce que tu désires avec orgueil, tu voudrais l'obtenir noblement : tu ne voudrais pas trahir, et cependant tu voudrais recueillir le fruit de la trahison : ce que tu veux posséder, noble Glamis, te crie : « Voilà ce qu'il faut faire, si tu aspires à m'obtenir. » Oui, pour avoir ce bien, il faut l'action que tu crains de commettre toi-même, bien plus que tu ne désires qu'elle ne soit pas commise. Hâte-toi d'arriver, que je fasse pénétrer mon courage dans ton oreille ; et que ma langue valeureuse dompte tout ce qui pourrait t'éloigner du cercle d'or dont le destin et une assistance surnaturelle semblent tous deux vouloir te couronner.

SEYTON *entre.*

Quelles nouvelles apportez-vous ?

Sey. Le Roi arrive ce soir.

Lady. Il faut que tu aies perdu le sens. Ton maître n'est-il pas avec lui ? Et s'il en était ainsi, il m'aurait avertie, afin que je fisse mes préparatifs.

Sey. Avec votre permission, rien n'est plus vrai ; notre thane arrive ; un de mes camarades le devance : hors d'haleine et presque mort de fatigue, à peine a-t-il eu la force de remplir son message.

Lady. Prends soin de lui ; il apporte de grandes nouvelles. (SEYTON *sort.*)

La voix est près de manquer au corbeau lui-même qui, par ses croassemens, annonce l'entrée fatale de Duncan dans mes murailles. Venez, esprits qui excitez les pensées homicides, dépouillez-moi de mon sexe, et du sommet de la tête jusqu'à la plante des pieds, remplissez-moi de la plus inexorable cruauté ! Epaississez mon sang, fermez tout accès, tout passage aux remords ; que la nature, par aucun retour de pitié, ne vienne ébranler mon projet funeste, ou en retarder l'exécution ? Venez, que dans mon sein le

That would'st thou holily; would'st not play false,
And yet would'st wrongly win: thou'd'st have, great Glamis,
That which cries, « Thus thou must do, if thou have it; »
And that, which rather thou dost fear to do,
Than wishest should be undone. Hie thee hither,
That I may pour my spirits in thine ear;
And chastise with the valour of my tongue
All that impedes thee from the golden round,
Which fate and metaphysical aid doth seem
To have thee crown'd withal.

Enter SEYTON.

What is your tidings?
Sey. The king comes here to-night.
Lady. Thou'rt mad to say it:
Is not thy master with him? who, were't so,
Would have inform'd for preparation.
Sey. So please you, it is true: our thane is coming:
One of my fellows had the speed of him;
Who, almost dead for breath, had scarcely more
Than would make up his message.
Lady. Give him tending;
He brings great news. — (*Exit* SEYTON.
The raven himself is hoarse,
That croaks the fatal enterance of Duncan
Under my battlements. Come, all you spirits
That tend on mortal thoughts, unsex me here;
And fill me, from the crown to the toe, top-full
Of direst cruelty! make thick my blood,
Stop up the access and passage to remorse;
That no compunctious visitings of nature
Shake my fell purpose; nor keep pace between
The effect, and it! Come to my woman's breasts,

lait se change en fiel; ministres du meurtre, venez, quelque part que vous soyez, substances invisibles, à épier le moment de nuire au genre humain! Viens, épaisse nuit, enveloppe-toi de la plus noire fumée de l'enfer. Que mon poignard affilé ne voie pas la blessure qu'il va faire, et que le ciel, perçant d'un regard tes voiles ténébreux, ne puisse me crier : *Arrête! arrête!*

Macbeth *entre.*

Noble Glamis! digne Cawdor! Plus grand encore que ces deux titres par le salut qui les a suivis, ta lettre m'a transportée au-delà du présent rempli d'ignorance, et je sens déjà exister l'avenir.

Macb. Ma chère amie, Duncan sera ici ce soir.

Lady. Et quand partira-t-il?

Macb. Demain; c'est son projet.

Lady. Oh! jamais le soleil ne verra ce demain! Votre visage, mon cher thane, est un livre où l'on pourrait lire d'étranges choses. Pour cacher vos desseins, prenez un maintien de circonstance; que le salut de bienvenue soit dans vos yeux, dans votre main, sur votre langue; paraissez tel que la fleur innocente; mais que cette fleur cache le serpent. Il faut avoir soin de l'hôte qui nous arrive; vous me chargerez d'exécuter le grand travail de cette nuit, après lequel nos nuits et nos jours n'auront plus d'autre règle que le pouvoir souverain.

Macb. Nous en parlerons plus tard.

Lady. Montrez seulement des traits plus sereins. Changer de visage, c'est donner des soupçons. Abandonnez-moi le reste. *(Ils sortent.)*

And take my milk for gall, you murd'ring ministers,
Wherever in your sightless substances
You wait on nature's mischief! Come, thick night,
And pall thee in the dunnest smoke of hell!
That my keen knife see not the wound it makes;
Nor Heaven peep through the blanket of the dark,
To cry, « Hold, hold! » —

Enter MACBETH.

Great Glamis! worthy Cawdor!
Greater than both, by the all-hail hereafter!
Thy letters have transported me beyond
This ignorant present, and I feel now
The future in the instant.
Macb. My dearest love,
Duncan comes here to-night.
Lady. And when goes hence?
Macb. To-morrow, as he purposes.
Lady. O, never
Shall sun that morrow see!
Your face, my thane, is as a book, where men
May read strange matters: — To beguile the time,
Look like the time; bear welcome in your eye,
Your hand, your tongue: look like the innocent flower,
But be the serpent under it. He that's coming
Must be provided for: and you shall put
This night's great business into my dispatch;
Which shall to all our nights and days to come
Give solely sovereign swayand masterdom.
Macb. We will speak further.
Lady. Only look up clear;
To alter favour ever is to fear:
Leave all the rest to me. (*Exeunt.*

(SCENE VI. — *L'entrée du château à Inverness.*)

(*Fanfares et roulement de tambours.*)

Le Roi Duncan, Banquo, Malcolm, Donalbain, Macduff, Lenox, Rosse *et deux* Chambellans *entrent.*

Le Roi. Ce château est agréablement situé : un air doux et léger pénètre dans nos sens calmés.

Ban. Cet hôte des étés, le martinet, habitant des temples, en cherchant ici le séjour qu'il aime, nous annonce que l'haleine des cieux caresse ces lieux avec amour. Pas une frise, pas une corniche, pas un seul angle commode où il n'ait suspendu son lit et le berceau de ses enfans. J'ai observé que dans tous les endroits où ces oiseaux viennent nicher et se tiennent beaucoup, l'air est toujours plus pur.

Lady Macbeth *entre, avec* Seyton *et deux* Dames.

Le Roi. Voyez, voyez! notre honorable hôtesse! — L'amitié que l'on nous témoigne cause quelquefois des embarras que nous accueillons avec reconnaissance, comme des marques d'affection. Ainsi je serai cause que vous demanderez à Dieu de nous récompenser de vos peines, et que vous nous remercierez de l'embarras que nous vous donnons.

Lady. Tout notre zèle, fût-il doublé et redoublé, ne serait encore qu'une faible offrande à opposer à cet amas immense d'honneurs dont votre majesté comble notre maison. Vos anciens bienfaits, et les dignités nouvelles que vous venez d'accumuler sur les anciennes, vous assurent à jamais nos vœux et nos humbles prières.

Le Roi. Où est le thane de Cawdor? Nous le suivions de très-près; et nous avions le projet de vous le présenter: mais il est bon cavalier; et son amour, aussi vif que son

SCENE VI. — *The Gates of Inverness Castle.*
Flourish of Trumpets and Drums.

Enter KING DUNCAN, BANQUO, MALCOLM, DONALBAIN, MACDUFF, LENOX, ROSSE, *and two* CHAMBERLAINS.

King. This castle hath a pleasant seat; the air
Nimbly and sweetly recommends itself
Unto our gentle senses.
Ban. This guest of summer,
The temple-haunting martlet, does approve,
By his loved mansionry, that the heaven's breath
Smells wooingly here; no jutty frieze,
Buttress, nor coigne of vantage, but this bird
Hath made his pendent bed, and procreant cradle:
Where they most breed and haunt, I have observed,
The air is delicate.

Enter LADY MACBETH, SEYTON, *and two* LADIES.

King. See, see! our honour'd hostess! —
The love, that follows us, sometime is our trouble,
Which still we thank as love. Herein I teach you,
How you shall bid Heaven yield us for your pains,
And thank us for your trouble.
Lady. All our service
In every point twice done, and then done double,
Were poor and simple business, to contend
Against those honours deep and broad, wherewith
Your majesty loads our house: For those of old,
And the late dignities heap'd up to them,
We rest your hermits.
King. Where's the thane of Cawdor?
We coursed him at the heels, and had a purpose
To be his purveyor; but he rides well;
And his great love, sharp as his spur, hath holp him

éperon, lui a fait atteindre la maison avant nous. Belle et noble dame, nous serons votre hôte pour cette nuit.

Lady. Vos serviteurs regarderont toujours leurs propres personnes, leur maison et tout ce qu'ils possèdent comme des biens qu'ils tiennent en compte, pour les faire servir, selon le bon plaisir de votre majesté, à la balance de ce qu'elle doit réclamer comme lui appartenant.

Le Roi. Donnez-moi la main; conduisez-moi vers mon hôte : nous l'aimons beaucoup. Nous sommes à vos ordres, noble hôtesse.

(*Fanfares, roulement de tambours. — Ils sortent.*)

SCÈNE VII. *Le château de* MACBETH, *à Inverness.*

MACBETH *entre.*

Macb. Si tout était fini, lorsque l'action est terminée, ce serait bien : le plus tôt serait le mieux, si l'assassinat tranchait à la fois toutes les conséquences, et que le moment qui l'accomplit assurât le succès. Qu'après ce seul coup on pût dire, c'est tout, cela finit tout, au moins ici-bas, sur ce rivage, sur cet écueil du temps! — Nous aborderions au hasard la vie future. — Mais, en pareil cas, nous subissons toujours cet arrêt, que les sanglantes leçons données par nous, une fois apprises, retournent à leur inventeur, pour sa perte. La justice, à la main toujours égale, porte à nos propres lèvres le calice empoisonné que nous avons préparé. — Il est ici sous la foi d'une double sauve-garde. D'abord je suis son parent et son sujet; deux puissans motifs contre cette action; ensuite, comme son hôte, je devrais fermer la porte à son meurtrier, loin de saisir moi-même le poignard. — D'ailleurs ce Duncan est né si doux, il a rempli d'une manière si irréprochable ses grandes

To his home before us. Fair and noble hostess,
We are your guest to-night.
Lady. Your servants ever
Have theirs, themselves, and what is theirs, in compt,
To make their audit at your highness' pleasure,
Still to return your own.
King. Give me your hand;
Conduct me to mine host; we love him highly.
By your leave, hostess.

(*Flourish of Trumpets and Drums. — Exeunt.*

SCENE VII. — MACBETH'S *Castle at Inverness.*

Enter MACBETH.

Macb. If it were done, when 'tis done, then 't were well;
It were done quickly, if the assassination
Could trammel up the consequence, aud catch,
With his surcease, success. — That but this blow
Might be the be-all, and the end-all, here,
But here, upon this bank and schoal of time! —
We'd jump the life to come. — But, in these cases,
We still have jugdment here, that we but teach
Bloody instructions; which, being taught, return
To plague the inventor: This even-handed justice
Commends the ingredients for our poison'd chalice
To our own lips. — He's here in double trust:
First, as I am his kinsman and his subject,
Strong both against the deed; then, as his host,
Who should against his murderer shut the door,
Not bear the knife myself. — Besides, this Duncan
Hath born his faculties so meek, hath been
So clear in his great office, that his virtues

fonctions, que ses vertus, comme des anges, à la voix d'airain, s'éleveront contre la damnable atrocité de ce meurtre. Je n'ai, pour presser mon projet, d'autre aiguillon que cette seule ambition qui s'élance, se retourne sur elle-même, et retombe sans cesse. — Eh bien! quelle nouvelle?

LADY MACBETH *entre.*

Lady. Il aura bientôt fini de souper : pourquoi avez-vous quitté la salle?

Macb. M'a-t-il demandé?

Lady. Sans doute : ne le savez-vous pas?

Macb. Ne nous occupons pas davantage de ce projet. Il m'a comblé d'honneurs depuis peu; et j'ai acquis parmi toutes les classes une réputation brillante comme l'or, dont je voudrais me parer dans son premier éclat, au lieu de m'en dépouiller si tôt.

Lady. Etait-elle dans l'ivresse, l'espérance que vous aviez adoptée? a-t-elle dormi depuis, et ne se réveille-t-elle maintenant que pour paraître pâle et livide à l'aspect de ce qu'elle a fait si volontiers? Dès ce moment j'apprécie ton amour. — Crains-tu de montrer tes actions et ta puissance égales à ton désir? Aspiras-tu à ce que tu regardes comme l'ornement de la vie, pour vivre en lâche à tes propres yeux, semblable au chat du proverbe qui place toujours *je n'ose pas* à côté de *je voudrais bien?*

Macb. Je t'en prie, laisse-moi. J'ose tout ce qui est digne d'un homme; celui qui ose davantage cesse d'en être un.

Lady. Quelle bête vous excita donc à me parler de ce projet? Quand vous osâtes le former, alors vous étiez un

Will plead like angels, trumpet-tongued, against
The deep damnation of his taking-off:
I have no spur
To prick the sides of my intent, but only
Vaulting ambition, which o'erleaps itself,
And falls on the other—How now! what news?

Enter Lady Macbeth.

Lady. He has almost supp'd: why have you left the chamber?

Macb. Hath he ask'd for me?

Lady. Know you not, he has?

Macb. We will proceed no further in this business:
He hath honour'd me of late, and I have bought
Golden opinions from all sorts of people,
Which would be worn now in their newest gloss,
Not cast aside so soon.

Lady. Was the hope drunk,
Wherein you dress'd yourself? hath it slept since,
And wakes it now, to look so green and pale
At what it did so freely? From this time,
Such I account thy love. — Art thou afeard
To be the same in thine own act and valour,
As thou art in desire? Would'st thou have that
Which thou esteem'st the ornament of life,
And live a coward in thine own esteem, —
Letting, I dare not, wait upon, I would,
Like the poor cat i' th' adage?

Macb. 'Prythee, peace:
I dare do all that may become a man;
Who dares do more, is none.

Lady. What beast was it then,
That made you break this enterprise to me?

homme; et, en devenant plus grand que vous n'êtes, vous seriez plus qu'un homme. Ni le temps ni le lieu ne vous favorisaient alors; et vous vouliez faire naître l'occasion: maintenant elle se présente d'elle-même, et par la facilité qu'elle vous offre, vous voilà défait! J'ai allaité; je sais combien il est doux d'aimer l'être qui suce notre lait: au moment où il me souriait, j'aurais arraché mon sein de ses tendres lèvres, et je lui aurais fait sauter la cervelle, si je l'avais juré, comme vous avez juré ceci.

Macb. Et si nous manquons le coup?

Lady. Le manquer! songez seulement à fixer votre courage en un lieu où il puisse rester, et nous réussirons. Dès que Duncan sera endormi (et la fatigue du voyage va le plonger dans un profond sommeil), j'aurai soin, moi, à force de vin et de santés, d'assoupir tellement ses deux chambellans, que leur mémoire, cette gardienne des idées, ne sera plus qu'une vaine fumée, et que le réservoir de la raison ne sera plus qu'un alambic. Lorsqu'un sommeil pesant, semblable à la mort, accablera leurs corps saturés, que ne pouvons-nous exécuter, vous et moi, sur Duncan sans défense? Que ne pouvons-nous imputer à ses officiers pleins de vin, qui porteront pour nous le crime de ce grand meurtre?

Macb. Ne mets au jour que des fils; car ton ame inflexible ne convient qu'à des hommes. — En effet, ne pourra-t-on pas croire, lorsque nous aurons teint de sang ces deux gardiens de sa chambre, et que nous aurons fait usage de leurs poignards, que ce sont eux qui ont commis le crime?

Lady. Qui osera le voir autrement, lorsque nous ferons

When you durst do it, then you were a man;
And, to be more than what you were, you would
Be so much more than man. Nor time, nor place,
Did then adhere, and yet you would make both:
They have made themselves, and that their fitness now
Does unmake you. I have given suck; and know
How tender 'tis to love the babe that milks me:
I would, while it was smiling in my face,
Have pluck'd my nipple from his boneless gums,
And dash'd the brains out, had I but so sworn
As you have done to this.

Macb. If we should fail --

Lady. We fail! —
But screw your courage to the sticking-place,
And we'll not fail. When Duncan is asleep,
(Whereto the rather shall his day's hard journey
Soundly invite him,) his two chamberlains
Will I with wine and wassel so convince,
That memory, the warder of the brain,
Shall be a fume, and the receipt of reason
A limbeck only: when in swinish sleep
Their drenched natures lie, as in a death,
What cannot you and I perform upon
The unguarded Duncan? what not put upon
His spungy officers; who shall bear the guilt
Of our great quell?

Macb. Bring forth men-children only!
For thy undaunted mettle should compose
Nothing but males. Will it not be received,
When we have mark'd with blood those sleepy two
Of his own chamber, and used their very daggers,
That they have done't?

Lady. Who dares receive it other,

toul retentir de notre douleur et de nos cris, après sa mort?

Macb. Je suis décidé ; et tous mes muscles, agens de l'action , sont tendus pour ce terrible moment.—Sortons; amusons-les par de belles apparences : un visage perfide doit cacher lés secrets du cœur d'un traître. (*Ils sortent.*)

As we shall make our griefs and clamour roar
Upon his death?

Macb. I am settled, and bend up
Each corporal agent to this terrible feat.—
Away, and mock the time with fairest show;
False face must hide what the false heart doth know.

(*Exeunt.*)

ETYMOLOGY.

THE second part of Grammar is Etymology; which treats of the different sorts of words, their various modifications, and their derivation.

There are in English nine sorts of words, or, as they are commonly called, PARTS OF SPEECH; namely, the ARTICLE, the SUBSTANTIVE OR NOUN; the ADJECTIVE, the PRONOUN, the VERB, the ADVERB, the PREPOSITION, the CONJUNCTION, and the INTERJECTION.

1. An Article is a word prefixed to substantives, to point them out, and to show how far their signification extends; as, *a* garden, *an* eagle, *the* woman.

2. A substantive or noun is the name of any thing that exists, or of which we have any notion; as, *London*, *man*, *virtue*.

3. An adjective is a word added to a substantive, to express its quality; as, An *industrious* man, a *virtuous* woman.

4. A pronoun is a word used instead of a noun, to avoid the too frequent repetition of the same word; as, The man is happy; *he* is benevolent; *he* is useful.

5. A verb is a word which signifies to BE, to DO, or to SUFFER; as, "I *am*, I *rule*, I *am ruled*."

6. An Adverb is a part of speech joined to a verb, an adjective, and sometimes to another adverb, to express some quality or circumstance respecting it; as, he reads *well*; a *truly* good man; he writes *very correctly*.

7. Prepositions serve to connect words with one another, and to show the relation between them; as, "He went *from* London *to* York;" "she is *above* disguise;" "they are supported *by* industry."

8. A conjunction is a part of speech that is chiefly used to connect sentences; so as, out of two or more sentences, to make but one: it sometimes connects only words; as, "Thou *and* he are happy, *because* you are good." "Two *and* three are five."

9. An interjection is a word used to express some passion or emotion of the mind: as, "Oh! I have alienated my friend; alas! I fear, for life."

ARTICLE.

An Article is a word prefixed to substantives, to point them out, and to show how far their signification extends; as, *a* garden, *an* eagle, *the* woman.

In English there are but two articles, *a* and *the*; *a* becomes *an* before a vowel, and before a silent *h*; as, *an* acorn, *an* hour. But if the *h* be sounded, the *a* only is to be used; as, *a* hand, *a* heart, *a* highway.

A or *an* is styled the indefinite article: it is used in a vague sense, to point out one single thing of the kind, in other respects indeterminate; as, "Give me *a* book;" "Bring me *an* apple."

The is called the definite article, because it ascertains what particular thing or things are meant: as, "Give me *the* book;" "Bring me *the* apples;" meaning some book, or apples, referred to.

A substantive, without any article to limit it, is generally taken in its widest sense; as, "A candid temper is proper for man;" that is, for all mankind.

SUBSTANTIVE.

A substantive or noun is the name of any thing that exists, or of which we have any notion; as, *London*, *man*, *virtue*.

Substantives are either proper or common.

Proper names or substantives are the names appropriated to individuals; as, George, London, Thames.

Common names or substantives stand for kinds containing many sorts, or for sorts containing many individuals under them; as, animal, man, tree, etc.

To substantives belong gender, number, and case; and they are all of the third person, when spoken *of*, and of the second, when spoken *to*: as, "Blessings attend us on every side: Be grateful, children of men!" that is, "*ye* children of men."

GENDER.

Gender is the distinction of nouns, with regard to sex. There are three genders, the Masculine, the Feminine, and the Neuter.

The masculine gender denotes animals of the male kind; as, a man, a horse, a bull.

The feminine gender signifies animals of the female kind; as, a woman, a duck, a hen.

The neuter gender denotes objects which are neither males nor females; as, a field, a house, a garden.

Some substantives naturally neuter are, by a figure of speech, converted into the masculine or feminine gender; as, when we say of the sun, *he* is setting, and of a ship, *she* sails well, etc.

The English language has three methods of distinguishing the sex, viz.

NUMBER.

Number is the consideration of an object, as one or more.

Substantives are of two numbers, the singular and the plural.

The singular number expresses but one object; as, a chair, a table.

The plural number signifies more objects than one; as, chairs, tables.

Some nouns, from the nature of the things which they express, are used only in the singular, others only in the plural from; as, wheat, pitch, gold, sloth, pride, etc. and bellows, scissors, ashes, riches, etc.

Some words are the same in both numbers; as, deer, sheep, swine, etc.

The plural number of nouns is generally formed by adding *s* to the singular; as dove, doves; face, faces; thought, thoughts. But when the substantive singular ends in *x*, *ch* *sh*, or *ss*, or *s*, we add *es* in the plural; as, box, boxes; church, churches; lash, lashes; kiss, kisses; rebus, rebuses.

Nouns ending in *f* or *fe*, are generally rendered plural by the change of those terminations into *ves*; as, loaf, loaves; wife, wives. Those which end in *ff*, have the regular plural; as, ruff, ruffs.

Such as have *y* in the singular, with no other vowel in the same syllable, change it into *ies* in the plural; beauty, beauties; fly, flies; but the *y* is not changed, when there is another vowel in the syllabe; as, key, keys; delay, delays.

CASE.

In English, substantives have three cases, the Nominative, the Possessive, and the Objective.

The nominative case simply expresses the name of a thing, or the subject of the verb; as, " The *boy* plays;" " The *girls* learn."

The possessive case expresses the relation of property or possession; and has an apostrophe, with the letter *s* coming after it; as, " The scholar's duty," " My father's house."

When the plural ends in *s*, the other *s* is omitted, but

the apostrophe is retained; as, "On eagles'wings;" "The drapers'company."

Sometimes also, when the singular terminates in *ss*, the apostrophic *s* is not added; as, "For goodness' sake; "For righteousness' sake."

The objective case expresses the object of an action, or of a relation; and generally follows a verb active, or a preposition; as, "John assists Charles;" "They live in London."

English substantives are declined in the following manner:

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nominative Case.	A mother.	Mothers.
Possessive Case.	A mother's.	Mothers.'
Objective Case.	A mother.	Mothers.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nominative Case.	The man.	The men.
Possessive Case.	The man's.	The men's.
Objective Case.	The man.	The men.

ADJECTIVES.

An adjective is a word aded to a substantive, to express its quality; as, "An industrious man;" "A benevolent mind."

In English the adjective is not varied on account of gender, number, or case. Thus we say, " A careless boy; careless girls."

The only variation which it admits, is that of the degrees of comparison.

There are commonly reckoned three degrees of comparison; the positive, comparative, and superlative.

The positive state expresses the quality of an object, without any increase or diminution; as, good, wise, great.

The comparative degree increases or lessens the positive in signification; as, wiser, greater, less wise.

The superlative degree increases or lessens the positive to the highest or lowest degree; as, wisest, greatest; least wise.

The simple word, or positive, becomes the comparative, by adding *r* or *er;* and the superlative, by adding *st* or *est*, to the end of it; as, wise, wiser, wisest; great, greater greatest. And the adverbs *more* and *most*, placed before the adjective, have the same effect; as, wise, *more* wise, *most* wise.

Monosyllables, for the most part, are compared by *er* or *est;* and dissyllables by *more* and *most;* as, mild, milder, mildest; frugal, more frugal, most frugal.

Some words of very common use are irregularly formed: as, " good, better, best; bad, worse, worst; little, less, least; much or many, more, most;" and a few others.

PRONOUNS.

A pronoun is a word used instead of a noun, to avoid the too frequent repetition of the same word; as, " The man is happy," " *he* is benevolent," " *he* is useful."

There are three kinds of pronouns, viz. the Personal, the Relative, and the Adjective Pronouns.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

There are five personal pronouns; viz. *I*, *thou*, *he*, *she*, *it;* with their plurals, *we*, *ye* or *you*, *they*.

Personal pronouns admit of person, number, gender, and case.

The persons of pronouns are three in each of the numbers, viz.

I, is the first person	Singular.
Thou, is the second person	
He, *she*, or *it*, is the third person	

We, is the first person *Ye* or *you*, is the second person *They*, is the third person	Plural.

The numbers of pronouns, like those of substantives, are two, the singular and the plural; as, *I, thou, he; we, ye, they.*

Gender has respect only to the third person singular of the pronouns, *he, she, it. He* is masculine; *she* is feminine; *it* is neuter.

Pronouns have three cases; the nominative, the possessive, and the objective.

The objective case of a pronoun has, in general, a form different from that of the nominative or the possessive case.

The personal pronouns are thus declined.

Person.	Case.	Singular.	Plural.
First.	*Nom.*	I.	We.
	Possess.	Mine.	Ours.
	Obj.	Me.	Us.
Second.	*Nom.*	Thou.	Ye *or* you.
	Possess.	Thine.	Yours.
	Obj.	Thee.	You.
Third.	*Nom.*	He.	They.
Mas.	*Possess.*	His.	Theirs.
	Obj.	Him.	Them.
Third.	*Nom.*	She.	They.
Fem.	*Possess.*	Hers.	Theirs.
	Obj.	Her.	Them.
Third.	*Nom.*	It.	They.
Neuter.	*Possess.*	Its.	Theirs.
	Obj.	It.	Them.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

Relative Pronouns are such as relate, in general, to some word or phrase going before, which is thence called the antecedent : they are *who*, *which*, and *that;* as, "The man is happy *who* lives virtuously."

What is a kind of compound relative, including both the antecedent and the relative, and is mostly equivalent to *that which*; as, " This is *what* I wanted ;" that is to say, "*the thing which* I wanted."

Who is applied to persons, *which* to animals and inanimate things; as, " He is a friend, *who* is faithful in adversity; "The *bird which* sung so sweetly is flown ;" This is the *tree*, *which* produces no fruit."

That, as a relative, is often used to prevent the too frequent repetition of *who* and *which.* It is applied to both persons aud things ; as, " *He that* acts wisely deserves praise; " " Modesty is a *quality that* highly adorns a woman."

Who is of both numbers, and is thus declined :

SINGULAR AND PLURAL.

Nominative.	Who.
Possessive.	Whose.
Objective.	Whom.

Who, *which*, *what*, are called *Interrogatives*, when they are used in asking questions ; as, " *Who* is he? " " *Which* is the book? " " *What* are you doing?"

ADJECTIVE PRONOUNS.

Adjective pronouns are of a mixed nature, participating the properties both of pronouns and adjectives.

The adjective pronouns may be subdivided into four sorts, namely, the *possessive*, the *distributive*, the *demonstrative*, and the *indefinite*.

1. The *possessive* are those which relate to possession or property.

There are seven of them ; viz. *my* , *thy*, *his*, *her*, *our, your, their.*

Mine and *thine*, instead of *my* and *thy*, were formerly used before a substantive or adjective beginning with a vowel or a silent *h* ; as, " Blot out all *mine* iniquities. "

2. The *distributive* are those which denote the persons or things that make up a number, as taken separately and singly. They are *each*, *every*, *either*; as, " *Each* of his brothers is in a favourable situation ;" " *Every* man must account for himself;" " I have not seen *either* of them."

3. The *demonstrative* are those which precisely point out the subjects to which they relate : *this* and *that*, *these* and *those*, are of this class ; as , " *This* is true charity ; *that* is only its image, "

This refers tho the nearest person or thing, and *that* to the more distant : as , " *This* man is more intelligent than *that.*" *This* indicates the latter, or last mentioned ; *that*, the former , or first mentioned : as, " Wealth and poverty are both temptations : *that* tends to excite pride , *this* discontent. "

4. The *indefinite* are those which express their subjects in an indefinite or general manner. The following are of this kind : *some lother*, *any* , *one*, *all*, *such* , etc.

Other is decl'ined in the foll'owing manner:

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom.	*other.*	*others.*
Poss.	*other's.*	*others'.*
Obj.	*other.*	*others.*

VERBS.

A Verb is a word which signifies to BE, to DO, or to SUFFER ; as , " I am , I rule , I am ruled. "

Verbs are of three kinds; ACTIVE, PASSIVE, and NEUTER. They are also divided into REGULAR, IRREGULAR, and DEFECTIVE:

A Verb Active expresses an action, and necessarily implies an agent, and an object acted upon; as, to love, " I love Penelope."

A Verb Passive expresses a passion or suffering, or the receiving of an action; and necessarily implies an object acted upon, and an agent by which it is acted upon; as, to be loved; " Penelope is loved by me. »

A Verb Neuter expresses neither action nor passion; but being, or a state of being; as, " I am, I sleep, I sit."

Auxiliary, or Helping verbs, are those by the help of which the English verbs are principally conjugated; they are *do*, *be*, *have*, *shall*, *will*, *may*, *can*, with their variations; and *let* and *must*, which have no variation.

To verbs belong NUMBER, PERSON, MOOD, and TENSE.

NUMBER AND PERSON.

Verbs have two numbers, the Singular and the Plural; as, " I love, we love."

In each number there are three persons; as,

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Firs Person.	I love.	We love.
Second Person.	Thou lovest.	Ye love.
Third Person.	He loves.	They love.

MOODS.

Mood or mode is a praticular form of the verb, showing the manner in which the being, action, or passion, is represented.

There are five moods of verbs, the INDICATIVE, the IMPERATIVE, the POTENTIAL, the SUBJUNCTIVE, and the INFINITIVE.

The Indicative Mood simply indicates or declares a thing; as, " He loves; he is loved : " or it asks a question; as, " Does he love? Is he loved? "

The Imperative Mood is used for commanding, exhorting, entreating, or permitting; as, "Depart thou; mind ye; let us stay; go in peace."

The Potential Mood implies possibility or liberty, power, will, or obligation; as, "It may rain; he may go or stay; I can ride; he would walk; they should learn."

The Subjunctive Mood represents a thing under a condition, motive, wish, supposition, etc.; and is preceded by a conjunction, expressed or understood, and attended by another verb; as, "I will respect him, *though* he chide me;" "Were he good, he would be happy :" that is, "*if* he were good."

The Infinitive Mood expresses a thing in a general and unlimited manner, without any distinction of number or person; as, "to act, to speak, to be feared."

The Participle is a certain form of the verb, and derives its name from its participating, not only the properties of a verb, but also those of an adjective; as, "I am desirous of *knowing* him;" "*Admired* and *applauded*, he became vain;" " *Having finished* his work, he submitted it," etc.

There are three Participles, the Present or active, the Perfect or Passive, and the compound Perfect: as, "loving, loved, having loved."

TENSES.

Tense, being the distinction of time, might seem to admit only of the present, past, and future; but to mark it more accurately, it is made to consist of six variations, viz. the PRESENT, the IMPERFECT, the PERFECT, the PLUPERFECT, and the FIRST and SECOND FUTURE TENSES.

The Present Tense represents an action or event as

passing at the time in which it is mentioned; as, "I rule; I am ruled; I think; I fear."

The Imperfect Tense represents the action or event, either as past and finished, or as remaining unfinished at a certain time past: as, "I loved her for her modesty and virtue;" "They were travelling post when he met them."

The Perfect Tense not only refers to what is past, but also conveys an allusion to the present time; as, "I have finished my letter;" "I have seen the person that was recommended to me."

The Pluperfect Tense represents a thing not only as past, but also as prior to some other point of time specified in the sentence; as, "I had finished my letter before he arrived."

The first Future Tense represents the action as yet to come, either with or without respect to the precise time when; as, "The sun will rise to-morrow;" "I shall see them again."

The second Future intimates that the action will be fully accomplished, at or before the time of another future action or event; as, "I shall have dined at one o'clock." "The two houses will have finished their business, when the king comes to prorogue them."

The Conjugation of a verb is the regular combination and arrangement of its several numbers, persons, moods, and tenses.

The conjugation of an active verb is styled the ACTIVE VOICE; and that of a passive verb, the PASSIVE VOICE.

The auxiliary and active verb *To have*, is conjugated in the following manner.

TO HAVE.

Indicative Mood.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. *Pers.* I have.	1. We have.
2. *Pers.* Thou hast.	2. Ye *or* you have.
3. *Pers.* He, she, *or* it, hath *or* has.	3. They have.

IMPERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I had.	1. We had.
2. Thou hadst.	2. Ye *or* you had.
3. He, *etc.* had.	3. They had.

PERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1 I have had.	1. We have had.
2. Thou hast had.	2. Ye *or* you have had.
3. He has had.	3. They have had.

PLUPERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I had had.	1. We had had.
2. Thou hadst had.	2. Ye *or* you had had.
3. He had had.	3. They had had.

FIRST FUTURE TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I shall *or* will have.	1. We shall *or* will have.
2. Thou shalt *or* wilt have.	2. Ye *or* you shall *or* will have.
3. He shall *or* will have.	3. They shall *or* will have.

SECOND FUTURE TENSE.

SINGULAR.

1. I shall have had.
2. Thou wilt have had.
3. He will have had.

PLURAL.

1. We shall have had.
2. Ye *or* you will have had.
3. They will have had.

Imperative Mood.

SINGULAR.

1. Let me have.
2. Have thou, *or* do thou have.
3. Let him have.

PLURAL.

1. Let us have.
2. Have ye, *or* do ye *or* you have.
3. Let them have.

Potential Mood.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

1. I may *or* can have.
2. Thou mayst *or* canst have.
3. He may *or* can have.

PLURAL.

1. We may *or* can have.
2. Ye *or* you may *or* can have.
3. The may *or* can have.

IMPERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

1. I might, could, would, *or* should have.
2. Thou mightst, couldst, wouldst, *or* shouldst have.
3. He might, could, would, *or* should have.

PLURAL.

1. We might, could, would *or* should have.
2. Ye *or* you might, could, would, or should have.
3. They might, could, would, *or* should have.

PERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

1. I may *or* can have had.
2. Thou mayst *or* canst have had.
3. He may *or* can have had.

PLURAL.

1. We may *or* can have had.
2. Ye *or* you may *or* can have had.
3. They may *or* can have had.

PLUPERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I might, could, would, *or* should have had.	1. We might, could, would, *or* should have had.
2. Thou mightst, couldst, wouldst, *or* shouldst have had.	2. Ye *or* you might, could, would, *or* should have had.
3. He might, could, would, *or* should have had.	3. They might, could, would, *or* should have had.

Subjunctive Mood.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. If I have.	1. If we have.
2. If thou have.	2. If ye *or* you have.
3. If he have.	3. If they have.

Infinitive Mood.

PRESENT. To have. PERFECT. To have had.

Participles.

PRESENT OR ACTIVE.	Having.
PERFECT OR PASSIVE.	Had.
COMPOUND PERFECT.	Having had.

The Auxiliary and neuter verb *To be*, is conjugated as follows:

TO BE.

Indicative Mood.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I am.	1. We are.
2. Thou art.	1. Ye *or* you are.
3. He, she, *or* it, is.	3. They are.

IMPERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I was.	1. We were.
2. Thou wast.	2. Ye *or* you were.
3. He was.	3. They were.

PERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I have been.	1. We have been.
2. Thou hast been.	3. Ye *or* you have been.
3. He hath *or* has been.	3. They have been.

PLUPERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I had been.	1. We had been.
2. Thou hadst been.	2. Ye *or* you had been.
3. He had been.	3. They had been.

FIRST FUTURE TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I shall *or* will be.	1. We shall *or* will be.
2. Thou shalt *or* wilt be.	2. Ye *or* you shall *or* will be.
3. He shall *or* will be.	3. They shall *or* will be.

SECOND FUTURE TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I shall have been.	1. We shall have been.
2. Thou wilt have been.	2. Ye *or* you will have been.
3. He will have been.	3. They will have been.

Imperative Mood.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Let me be.	1. Let us be.
2. Be thou, *or* do thou be.	2. Be ye *or* you, *or* do ye be.
3. Let him be.	3. Let them be.

Potential Mood.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I may *or* can be.	1. We may *or* can be.
2. Thou mayst *or* canst be.	2. Ye *or* you may *or* can be.
3. He may *or* can be.	3. They may *or* can be.

IMPERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I might, could, would, *or* should be.	1. We might, could, would, *or* should be.
2. Thou mightst, couldst, wouldst, *or* shouldst be.	2. Ye *or* you might, could, would, *or* should be.
3. He might, could, would, *or* should be.	3. They might, could, would, *or* should be.

PERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I may *or* can have been.	1. We may *or* can have been.
2. Thou mayst *or* canst have been.	2. Ye *or* you may *or* can have been.
3. He may *or* can have been.	3. They may *or* can have been.

PLUPERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I might, could. would, *or* should have been.	1. We might, could, would, *or* should have been.
2. Thou mightst, couldst, wouldst, *or* shouldst have been.	2. Ye *or* you might, could, would, *or* should have been.
3. He might, could, would, *or* should have been.	3. They might, could, would, *or* should have been.

Subjunctive Mood.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. If I be.	1. If we be.
2. If thou be.	2. If ye *or* you be.
3. If he be.	3. If they be.

IMPERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. If I were.	1. If we were.
2. If thou wert.	2. If ye *or* you were.
3. If he were.	3. If they were.

Infinitive Mood.

PRESENT TENSE. To be. PERFECT. To have been.

Participles.

PRESENT. Being. PERFECT. Been.
COMPOUND PERFECT. Having been.

OF THE CONJUGATION OF REGULAR VERBS.

ACTIVE.

Verbs Active are called Regular, when they form their imperfect tense of the indicative mood, and their perfect participle, by adding to the verb *ed*, or *d* only when the verb ends in *e*; as,

PRESENT	IEPERF.	PERF. PARTICIP
I favour,	I favoured.	Favoured.
I love.	I loved.	Loved.

A Regular Active Verb is conjugated in the following manner:

TO LOVE.

Indicative Mood.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I love.	1. We love.
2. Thou lovest.	2. Ye *or* you love.
3. He, she, *or* it loveth *or* loves.	3. They love.

IMPERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I loved.	1. We loved.
2. Thou lovedst.	2. Ye *or* you loved.
3. He loved.	3. They loved.

PERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I have loved.	1. We have loved.
2. Thou hast loved.	2. Ye *or* you have loved.
3. He hath *or* has loved.	3. They have loved.

PLUPERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I had loved.	1. We had loved.
2. Thou hadst loved.	2. Ye *or* you had loved.
3. He had loved.	3. They had loved.

FIRST FUTURE TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I shall *or* will love.	1. We shall *or* will love.
2. Thou shalt *or* wilt love.	2. Ye *or* you shall *or* will love.
3. He shall *or* will love.	3. They shall *or* will love.

SECOND FUTURE TENSE.

SINGULAR.

1. I shall have loved.
2. Thou wilt have loved.
3. He will have loved.

PLURAL.

1. We shall have loved.
2. Ye *or* you will have loved.
3. They will have loved.

Imperative Mood.

SINGULAR.

1. Let me love.
2. Love thou *or* do thou love.
3. Let him love.

PLURAL.

1. Let us love.
2. Love ye *or* you, *or* do ye love.
3. Let them love.

Potential Mood.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

1. I may *or* can love.
2. Thou mayst *or* canst love.
3. He may *or* can love.

PLURAL.

1. We may *or* can love.
2. Ye *or* you may *or* can love.
3. They may *or* can love.

IMPERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

1. I might, could, would, *or* should love.
2. Thou mightst, couldst, wouldst, *or* shouldst love.
3. He might, could, would, *or* should love.

PLURAL.

1. We might, could, would, *or* should love.
2. Ye *or* you might, could, would, *or* should love.
3. They might, could, would, *or* should love.

PERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

1. I may *or* can have loved.
2. Thou mayst *or* canst have loved.
3. He may *or* can have loved.

PLURAL.

1. We may *or* can have loved.
2. Ye *or* you may *or* can have loved.
3. They may *or* can have loved.

PLUPERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I might, could, would, *or* should have loved.	1. We might, could, would, *or* should have loved.
2. Thou mightst, couldst, wouldst, *or* shouldst have loved.	2. Ye *or* you might, could, would, *or* should have loved.
3. He might, could, would, *or* should have loved.	3. They might, could, would, *or* should have loved.

Subjunctive Mood.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. If I love.	1. If we love.
2. If thou love.	2. If ye *or* you love.
3. If he love.	3. If they love.

Infinitive Mood.

PRESENT. To love. PEREECT. To have loved.

Participles.

PRESENT. Loving. PERFECT. Loved.

COMPOUND PERFECT. Having loved.

PASSIVE.

Verbs passive are called regular, when they form their perfect participle by the addition of *d* or *ed* to the verb; as, from the verb "To love", is formed the passive, "I am loved, I was loved, I shall be loved," etc.

A passive verb is conjugated by adding the perfect participle to the auxiliary *to be*, through all its changes of number, person, mood, and tense, in the following manner.

TO BE LOVED.

Indicative Mood.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I am loved.	1. We are loved.
2. Thou art loved.	2. Ye *or* you are loved.
3. He is loved.	3. They are loved.

IMPERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I was loved.	1. We were loved.
2. Thou wast loved.	2. Ye *or* you were loved.
3. He was loved.	3. They were loved.

PERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I have been loved.	1. We have been loved.
2. Thou hast been loved.	2. Ye *or* you have been loved.
3. He hath *or* has been loved.	3. They have been loved.

PLUPERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I had been loved.	1. We had been loved.
2. Thou hadst been loved.	2. Ye *or* you had been loved.
3. He had been loved.	3. They had been loved.

FIRST FUTURE TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I shall *or* will be loved.	1. We shall or will be loved.
2. Thou shalt *or* wilt be loved.	2. Ye *or* you shall *or* will be loved.
3. He shall *or* will be loved.	3. They shall *or* will be loved.

SECOND FUTURE TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I shall have been loved.	1. We shall have been loved.
2. Thou wilt have been loved.	2. Ye *or* you will have been loved
3. He will have been loved.	3. They will have been loved.

Imperative Mood.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Let me be loved.	1. Let us be loved.
2. Be thou loved, *or* do thou be loved.	2. Be ye *or* you loved, *or* do ye be loved.
3. Let him be loved.	3. Let them be loved.

Potential Mood.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I may *or* can be loved.	1. We may *or* can be loved.
2. Thou mayst *or* canst be loved.	2. Ye *or* you may *or* can be loved.
3. He may *or* can be loved.	3. They may *or* can be loved.

IMPERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I might, could, would, *or* should be loved.	1. We might, could, would, *or* should be loved.
2. Thou mightst, couldst, wouldst, *or* shouldst be loved.	2. Ye *or* you might, could, would, *or* should be loved.
3. He might, could, would, *or* should be loved.	3. They might, could, would, *or* should be loved.

PERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I may *or* can have been loved.	1. We may *or* can have been loved.

2. Thou mayst *or* canst have been loved.
3. He may *or* can have been loved.

2. Ye *or* you may *or* can have been loved.
3. They may *or* can have been loved.

PLUPERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

1. I might, could, would, *or* should have been loved.
2. Thou mightst, couldst, wouldst, *or* shouldst have been loved.
3. He might, could, would, *or* should have been loved.

PLURAL.

1. We might, could, would, *or* should have been loved.
2. Ye *or* you might, could, would, *or* should have been loved.
3. They might, could, would, *or* should have been loved.

Subjunctive Mood.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

1. If I be loved.
2. If thou be loved.
3. If he be loved.

PLURAL.

1. If we be loved.
2. If ye *or* you be loved.
3. If they be loved.

IMPERFECT TENSE.

SINGULAR.

1. If I were loved.
2. If thou wert loved.
3. If he were loved.

PLURAL.

1. If we were loved.
2. If ye *or* you were loved.
3. If they were loved.

Infinitive Mood.

FRESENE TENSE.

To be loved.

PERFECT.

To have been loved.

Participles.

PRESENT.	Being loved.
PERFECT *or* PASSIVE.	COMPOUND PERFECT.
Loved.	Having been loved.

IRREGULAR VERBS.

Irregular Verbs are those which do not form their imperfect tense, and their perfect participle, by the addition of *d* or *ed* to the verb; as,

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PERF. *or* PASS. PART.
I begin,	I began,	begun.
I know,	I knew,	known.

IRREGULAR VERBS ARE OF VARIOUS SORTS.

1. Such as have the present and imperfect tenses, and perfect participle, the same: as,

Present.	Imperfect.	Perfect Part.
Cost,	cost,	cost.
Put,	put;	put.

2. Such as have the impefect tense, and perfect participle, the same: as,

Present.	Imperfect.	Perfect Part.
Abide,	abode,	abode.
Sell,	sold,	sold.

3. Such as have the imperfect tense, and perfect participle, different: as,

Present.	Imperfect.	Perfect Part.
Arise,	arose,	arisen.
Blow,	blew,	blown.

The following list of the irregular verbs, wil, it is presumed, be found both comprehensive and accurate.

Present.	Imperfect.	Perf. or Pass. Pat.
Abide,	abode,	abode.
Am,	was,	been.
Arise,	arose,	arisen.
Awake,	awoke, R.	awaked.
Bear, *to bring forth*,	bare,	born.
Bear, *to carry*,	bore,	borne.
Beat,	beat,	beaten, beat.
Begin,	began,	begun.
Bend,	bent,	bent.
Bereave,	bereft, R.	bereft, R.
Beseech,	besought,	besought.
Bid,	bid, bade,	bidden, bid.
Bind,	bound,	bound.
Bite,	bit,	bitten, bit.
Bleed,	bled,	bled.
Blow,	blew,	blown.
Break,	broke,	broken.
Breed,	bred,	bred.
Bring,	brought,	brought.
Build,	built,	built.
Burst,	burst,	burst.
Buy,	bought,	bought.
Cast,	cast,	cast.
Catch,	caught, R.	caught, R.
Chide,	chid,	chidden, chid.
Choose,	chose,	chosen.
Cleave, *to stick, or adhere*,	} REGULAR.	
Cleave, *to split*,	clove *or* cleft;	cleft, cloven.
Cling,	clung,	clung.
Clothe,	clothed,	clad, R.
Come,	came,	come.
Cost,	cost,	cost.
Crow,	crew, R.	crowed.
Creep,	crept,	crept.

Present.	Imperfect.	Perf. or Pass. Part.
Cut.	cut,	cut.
Dare, *to venture*,	durst,	dared.
Dare, R. *to challenge.*		
Deal,	dealt, R.	dealt, R.
Dig,	dug, R.	dug, R.
Do,	did,	done.
Draw,	drew,	drawn.
Drive,	drove,	driven.
Drink,	drank,	drunk.
Dwell,	dwelt, R.	dwelt, R.
Eat,	eat, *or* ate,	eaten.
Fall,	fell,	fallen.
Feed,	fed,	fed.
Feel,	felt,	felt.
Fight,	fought,	fought.
Find,	found,	found.
Flee,	fled,	fled.
Fling,	flung,	flung.
Fly,	flew,	flown.
Forget,	forgot,	forgotten, forgot.
Forsake,	forsook,	forsaken.
Freeze,	froze,	frozen.
Get,	got,	got.
Gild,	gilt, R.	gilt, R.
Gird,	girt, R.	girt, R.
Give,	gave,	given.
Go,	went.	gone.
Grave,	graved,	graven.
Grind,	ground,	ground.
Grow,	grew,	grown.
Have,	had,	had.
Hang,	hung, R.	hung, R.
Hear,	heard,	heard.
Hew,	hewed,	hewn, R.
Hide,	hid,	hidden, hid.
Hit,	hit,	hit.
Hold,	held,	held.
Hurt,	hurt,	hurt.
Keep,	kept,	kept.

Present.	Imperfect.	Perf. or Pass. Part.
Knit,	knit, R.	knit, R.
Know,	knew,	known.
Lade,	laded,	laden.
Lay,	laid,	laid.
Lead,	led,	led.
Leave,	left,	left.
Lend,	lent,	lent.
Let,	let,	let.
Lie, *to lie down.*	lay,	lain.
Load,	loaded,	laden, R.
Lose,	lost,	lost.
Make,	made,	made.
Meet,	met,	met.
Mow,	mowed,	mown, R.
Pay,	paid,	paid.
Put,	put,	put.
Read,	read,	read.
Rend,	rent,	rent.
Rid,	rid,	rid.
Ride,	rode,	rode, *or* ridden.
Ring,	rung, rang.	rung.
Rise,	rose,	risen.
Rive,	rived,	riven.
Run,	ran,	run.
Saw,	sawed,	sawn, R.
Say,	said,	said.
See,	saw,	seen.
Seek,	sought,	sought.
Sell,	sold,	sold.
Send,	sent,	sent.
Set,	set,	set.
Shake,	shook,	shaken.
Shape,	shaped,	shaped, shapen.
Shave,	shaved,	shaven, R.
Shear,	sheared,	shorn.
Shed,	shed,	shed.
Shine,	shone, R.	shone, R.
Show,	showed,	shown.
Shoe,	shod,	shod.

Present.	Imperfect.	Perf. or Pass. Part.
Shoot,	shot,	shot.
Shrink,	shrunk,	shrunk.
Shred,	shred,	shred.
Shut,	shut,	shut.
Sing,	sung, sang,	sung.
Sink,	sunk, sank,	sunk.
Sit,	sat,	sat.
Slay,	slew,	slain.
Sleep,	slept,	slept.
Slide,	slid,	slidden.
Sling,	slung,	slung.
Slink,	slunk,	slunk.
Slit,	slit, R.	slit, *or* slitted.
Smite,	smote,	smitten.
Sow,	sowed,	sown, R.
Speak,	spoke,	spoken.
Speed,	sped,	sped.
Spend,	spent,	spent.
Spill,	spilt, R.	spilt, R.
Spin,	spun,	spun.
Spit,	spit, spat,	spit, spitten.
Split,	split,	split.
Spread,	spread,	spread.
Spring,	sprung, sprang,	sprung.
Stand,	stood,	stood.
Steal,	stole,	stolen.
Stick,	stuck,	stuck.
Sting,	stung,	stung.
Stink,	stunk,	stunk.
Stride,	strode *or* strid,	stridden.
Strike,	struck,	struck, *or* stricken.
String,	strung,	strung,
Strive,	strove,	striven.
Strow *or* strew,	strowed *or* strewed,	strown, strowed, strewed.
Swear,	swore,	sworn.
Sweat,	swet, R.	swet, R.
Swell,	swelled,	swollen, R.
Swim,	swum, swam,	swum.

Present.	Imperfect.	Perf. or Pass. Part.
Swing,	swung,	swung.
Take,	took,	taken.
Teach,	taught,	taught.
Tear,	tore,	torn.
Tell,	told,	told.
Think,	thought,	thought.
Thrive,	throve, R.	thriven.
Throw,	threw,	thrown.
Thrust,	thrust,	thrust.
Tread,	trod,	trodden.
Wax,	waxed,	waxen, R.
Wear,	wore,	worn.
Weave,	wove,	woven.
Weep,	wept,	wept.
Win,	won,	won.
Wind,	wound,	wound.
Work,	wrought,	wrought *or* worked.
Wring,	wrung,	wrung.
Write,	wrote,	written.

The verbs which are conjugated regularly, as well as irregularly, are marked with an R. Those preterits and participles, which are first mentioned in the list, seem to be the most eligible.

DEFECTIVE VERBS.

Defective Verbs are those which are used only in some of their moods and tenses: as, *am*, *was*, *been*; *can*, *could*; *may*, *might*, *shall*, *should*; *will*, *would*; etc.

ADVERB.

An Adverb is a part of speech joined to a verb, an adjective, and sometimes to another adverb, to express some quality or circumstance respecting it: as, "He reads *well*;" "A *truly* good man;" "He writes *very correctly*."

Some adverbs are compared thus; "Soon, sooner,

soonest; often, oftener, oftenest." Those ending in *ly*, are compared by *more* and *most*; as "Wisely, more wisely, most wisely."

The following are afew of the adverbs.

Once	lastly	presently	quickly	not
now	before	often	perhaps	how
here	lately	much	indeed	more.

PREPOSITION.

Prepositions serve to connect words with one another, and to show the relation between them. They are, for the most part, set before nouns and pronouns; as, "He went *from* London *to* York;" She is *above* disguise;" "They are supported *by* industry."

The following is a list of the principal prepositions :

Of	into	above	at	off
to	within	below	near	on *or* upon
for	without	between	up	among
by	over	beneath	down	after
with	under	from	before	about
in	through	beyond	behind	against.

CONJUNCTION.

A Conjunction is a part of speech that is chiefly used to connect sentences; so as, out of two or more sentences, to make but one. It sometimes connects only words.

Conjunctions are principally divided into two sorts, the COPULATIVE and the DISJUNCTIVE.

The Conjunction Copulative serves to connect or to continue a sentence, by expressing an addition, a supposition, a cause etc.: as, "He *and* his brother reside in London;" "I will go, *if* he will accompany me;" "You are happy, *because* you are good."

The Conjunction Disjunctive serves, not only to connect and continue the sentence, but also to express opposition of meaning in different degrees: as, "*Though* he was frequently reproved, *yet* he did not reform;" "They came with her, *but* went away without her."

The following is a list of the principal conjunctions:

The *Copulative.* And, that, both, for, therefore, if, then, since, because, wherefore.

The *Disjunctive.* But, than, though, either, or, as, unless, neither, nor, lest, yet, notwithstanding.

INTERJECTIONS.

An Interjection is a word used to express some passion or emotion of the mind: as, "Oh! I have alienated my friend; alas! I fear, for life."

The following are some of the interjections: O! pish! heigh! lo! behold! ah! tush! fie! hush! hail!

OF DERIVATION.

Words are derived from one another in various ways, viz.

1. Substantives are derived from verbs: as, from "to love" comes "lover."

2. Verbs are derived from substantives, adjectives, and sometimes from adverbs: as, from "salt" comes "to salt;" from "warm" comes "to warm;" from "forward" comes "to forward."

3. Adjectives are derived from substantives: as, from "health" comes "healthy."

4. Substantives are derived from adjectives: as, from "white" comes "whiteness."

5. Adverbs are derived from adjectives: as, from "base" comes "basely."

DIALOGUES

SUR DIFFÉRENS SUJETS.

DIALOGUE I.

POUR S'HABILLER.

Jean, apportez-moi une chemise et une cravate blanches ; celles que j'avais hier sont sales.

Voulez-vous une chemise fine ?

Non ; donnez-moi une chemise ordinaire.

Donnez-moi mon caleçon, ma culotte, mes bas, mes chaussons et ma robe de chambre.

Voulez-vous des bas de soie ou des bas de fil ?

Je prendrai des bas de soie.

Ces bas de soie sont troués.

Il y a une maille de rompue.

Il faudra les donner à la ravaudeuse, pour qu'elle les raccommode.

Je vais prendre des bas de coton.

Donnez-moi de l'eau pour que je me lave les mains, la bouche et le visage.

Voici votre peignoir, avec la boîte à poudre, la pommade et les peignes.

Les dents de mon peigne d'ivoire sont presque toutes cassées.

Donnez-moi une serviette pour essuyer mes mains.

Je vais faire ma barbe, car elle est très-longue.

DIALOGUES

ON DIFFERENT SUBJECTS.

DIALOGUE I.

TO DRESS ONE'S SELF.

John, bring me a clean shirt and neckcloth; those I wore yesterday are soiled.

Will you have a fine shirt?

No; give me a common shirt.

Give me my drawers, breeches, stockings, socks and morning gown.

Will you have silk or thread stockings?

I will put on silk stockings.

These silk stockings have holes in them.

There is a stitch fallen.

You must give them to the stocking-mender, that she may mend them.

I will put on cotton stockings.

Give me some water to wash my hands, mouth and face.

Here is your combing-cloth, with the powder-box, the pomatum and combs.

The teeth of my ivory comb are almost all broken.

Give me a napkin to wipe my hands.

I am going to shave myself; for my beard is very long.

Apportez-moi le bassin, les rasoirs, la savonnette, l'essence et le miroir.

Vos rasoirs ne valent rien; il y en a un qui est ébréché.

Il faudra les porter au coutelier, pour qu'il les repasse.

Ma chemise est bien froide; faites du feu et chauffez-la.

Donnez-moi mes jarretières et mes boucles, mon gilet et mes bretelles.

Mes souliers sont-ils décrotés?

Il me semble qu'il tombe de l'eau; il doit faire de la boue : dans ce cas je prendrai mon pantalon et mes bottes.

Voici votre pantalon et vos bottes bien reluisantes.

Quel habit allez-vous mettre?

Donnez-moi mon habit neuf; mon autre habit a quelques taches, il faudra le donner au dégraisseur.

Pourquoi ne prenez-vous pas votre redingote?

Vous avez raison.

Je vais la brosser et la battre.

Où est mon chapeau?

Prenez la vergette pour en ôter la poussière.

Donnez-moi mes gants et ma canne.

Vous ferez bien de prendre un parapluie.

J'oubliais de prendre ma bourse et un mouchoir blanc.

Si la blanchisseuse vient, vous lui donnerez mon linge sale, et vous verrez si elle rapporte le compte de ce qui lui a été donné la dernière fois.

DIALOGUE II.

POUR DÉJEUNER.

Je suis bien aise de vous voir, nous allons déjeuner ensemble.

Bring me the shaving dish, razors, washball, essence and looking-glass.

Your razors are good for nothing; there is one notched.

You must take them to the cutler's to get them ground.

My shirt is very cold; make a fire and warm it.

Give me my garters and buckles, my waistcoat and braces.

Are my shoes clean?

I think it rains; it must be muddy : in that case, I will put on my pantalons and boots.

Here are your blue pantaloons, and your boots well polished.

What coat do you put on?

Give me my new coat; my other coat has some spots on it, you must give it to the scourer.

Vhy do you not put on your surtout?

You are in the right.

I am going to brush and beat it.

Where is my hat?

Take the brush to brush off the dust.

Give me my gloves and my cane.

You would do well to take an umbrella.

I forgot to take my purse and a clean handkerchief.

If the washerwoman come, you will give her my foul linen, and you will see whether she brings back exactly what was given her last time.

DIALOGUE II.

FOR BREAKFAST.

I am very glad to see you, we shall breakfast together.

Je ne déjeune pas ordinairement de si bonne heure ; j'accepterai cependant volontiers l'offre que vous me faites, pour avoir le plaisir de vous tenir compagnie.

Que mangez-vous à votre déjeuner ?

Voulez-vous du jambon , des saucisses ou du pâté ?

Ne faites point d'extraordinaire pour moi ; je ne veux que partager votre déjeuner.

Je suis dans l'habitude de ne prendre que du thé ; mais comme j'ai grand appétit, je mangerai un peu de viande avec plaisir.

Jean, servez le déjeuner ; apportez le jambon , du vin , des verres , des couteaux et des fourchettes.

Laissez la bouilloire auprès du feu, pour que l'eau soit bien chaude.

Commençons à manger.

Voulez-vous que je vous serve une tranche de jambon ?

Très-volontiers.

Je vous traite en ami et sans cérémonie.

Je serais fâché que vous en agissiez autrement.

Ce jambon est excellent ; donnez-m'en une autre tranche.

Je mange beaucoup plus que vous.

Je ne dois pas vous servir d'exemple , je ne suis pas accoutumé à manger de la viande à mon déjeuner ; je me réserve pour le thé.

Dans ce cas , demandez donc le thé ; je ne veux pas manger sans vous.

Jean , apportez la boîte au thé , la théière , la bouilloire, le sucre, le beurre et les rôties.

Apportez aussi le sel et les petites cuillers.

Je vois avec peine que vous m'attendez.

Je vous demande pardon , j'attends que le thé soit infusé.

Voici le beurre, préparez vos rôties.

I do not commonly breakfast so early; I will nevertheless accept of the offer, that I may have the pleasure of your company.

What do you eat for your breakfast?

Will you have sausages, ham or pie?

Don't put yourself to any extraordinary expence upon my account; I merely consent to take part of your breakfast.

I am used to take nothing but tea; but as my appetite is good, I shall eat some meat with pleasure.

John, serve up the breakfast; bring in the ham, with wine, glasses, knives and forks.

Leave the kettle near the fire, that the water may be hot.

Let us begin to eat.

Shall I serve you with a slice of ham?

With all my heart.

I treat you as a friend, without ceremony.

I should be very sorry that you would act otherwise.

This ham is excellent; give me another slice of it.

I eat much more than you.

Do not let me be an example for you, I am not accustomed to eat any meat at breakfast; I wait for the tea.

In that case, ask for the tea; I will not eat without you.

John, bring in the canister, the tea-pot, the kettle, the sugar, the butter and the toast.

Bring also the salt and the tea-spoons.

I am sorry to see you are waiting for me.

I beg your pardon, I am only waiting till the tea is steeped.

Here is the butter, prepare your toast.

Je vous remercie ; je ne ferai pas de rôties, il me serait impossible de manger davantage.

Peut-être aimeriez-vous mieux prendre une tasse de café ou de chocolat?

Non, du tout; j'aime beaucoup le thé avec des rôties ; mais je n'ai plus faim : je prendrai une tasse de thé seulement.

Votre thé est très-bon ; on voit que vous en êtes amateur.

Pourrais-je vous en offrir une autre tasse?

Je vous suis infiniment obligé, mon déjeuner est fini.

—

DIALOGUE III.

POUR DINER.

Je suis charmé de ce que vous êtes venu dans ce moment, voilà l'heure de dîner.

Si vous n'avez pas d'invitation pour aujourd'hui, faites-moi, je vous prie, l'honneur d'accepter mon dîner.

Vous êtes bien bon, je l'accepterais volontiers, mais ma toilette ne me le permet pas.

Que cela ne soit pas un obstacle, nous ne serons que nous deux; ma femme et ma fille sont à la campagne. Je vous invite sans cérémonie ; ce n'est que pour avoir le plaisir d'être plus long-temps ensemble.

Dans ce cas, je consens de tout mon cœur à vous tenir compagnie, à condition que vous ne changerez rien à votre ordinaire.

Je vous assure que vous serez obéi.

Nous allons passer dans la salle à manger, le dîner est servi.

I thank you; I shall not take any toast, it is impossible for me to eat any more.

Perhaps you would like better to take a dish of coffee or chocolate.

Not at all; I like tea and toast very much, but I have no more appetite: I shall take a cup of tea only.

Your tea is very good, one can perceive that you like it.

May I offer you another cup?

I am infinitely obliged to you, I have done breakfast.

—

DIALOGUE III.

TO DINE.

I am glad you come at this moment, it is dinner time.

If you have no engagement for to day, I request you will do me the honour of dinning with me.

You are very kind: I would willingly accept, but my dress will not permit me.

Do not let that be an obstacle, we shall dine alone; my wife and daughter are in the country. I invite you without any ceremony; it is only to have the pleasure of being longer together.

In that case, I consent with all my heart to keep you company, on condition you make no change in the ordinary fare.

I promise you you shall be obeyed.

We will go into the dining room, the dinner is served up.

Pierre, apportez une serviette, un couteau, une cuiller, une fourchette, une assiette et un verre.

Donnez-vous la peine de vous asseoir ; ce siége vous est destiné.

Qu'aimez-vous le mieux, le potage au riz ou la soupe grasse avec des légumes?

Cela m'est indifférent ; je vous demanderai de la soupe avec un peu de légumes.

Cette soupe est excellente.

Pierre, ce verre est mal rincé ; apportez-en un autre, avec un tire-bouchon pour déboucher la bouteille.

De quel vin puis-je vous offrir ? Voilà du Bourgogne et du Bordeaux.

Le choix est embarrassant ; je crois que le vin de Bourgogne est préférable au commencement du repas.

Voilà un bouilli de belle apparence.

Je vais vous en couper une tranche.

Donnez du pain à Monsieur.

Qu'aimez-vous mieux, du pain tendre ou du pain rassis?

Je mangerai du pain rassis ; comme je mange plus facilement la mie que la croûte, je craindrais que le pain tendre, surtout s'il est chaud, ne me fît du mal.

Vous ne buvez point ; que j'aie l'honneur de vous verser à boire.

Arrêtez, je vous prie ; vous m'en avez versé à plein verre, je vais en répandre sur la nappe.

Apportez le rôti et la salade.

Je vais me charger d'assaisonner la salade, pendant que vous allez découper cette poularde.

Voici le sel, le poivre, le vinaigre et l'huile.

Ne vous donnez pas la peine de la retourner, c'est l'affaire de ce garçon.

Je vais vous servir une aile, à moins que vous ne préfériez la cuisse ou tout autre morceau.

Peter, bring a napkin, a knife, a spoon, a fork, a plate and a glass.

Be pleased to sit down, this seat is intended for you.

Which do you prefer, rice-porridge or soup with vegetables?

It is indifferent to me; I will thank you for some soup with a few vegetables.

This soup is excellent.

Peter, this glass is not wel rinsed; bring another, with a corkscrew to uncork the bottle.

What wine can I offer you? There are Burgundy and Claret.

The choice is perplexing; I think Burgundy is preferable at the beginning of a meal.

That boiled meat looks well.

I am going to cut you a slice of it.

Give the gentleman some bread.

Which do you prefer, new or stale bread?

I will eat stale bread; as I eat crum more easily than I do crust, I should be afraid the new bread, particularly if warm, would do me harm.

You do not drink; let me have the honour of pouring you out something to drink.

Stop, I pray you; you have poured me out a bumper, I shall spill some of it upon the cloth.

Bring in the roast meat and salad.

I will take upon me to dress the salad, while you cut up that fowl.

Here are the salt, pepper, vinegar and oil.

Do not give yourself the trouble to turn it, this boy will do that.

I am going to help you to a wing, unless you prefer the leg or any other part.

Je vous remercie.

Cette poularde est délicieuse, j'y retourne avec plaisir.

Prenez de la salade.

Je vous suis infiniment obligé; je ne mangerai pas davantage.

Vous ne mangez point ; en vérité, je suis confus de vous avoir offert un si mauvais repas.

Pardonnez-moi, j'ai beaucoup mangé, beaucoup plus que je n'aurais dû le faire, ayant déjeuné à la fourchette, et plus tard qu'à l'ordinaire : je vous assure que je ne pourrai pas souper.

Vous voyez que je vous ai tenu parole, et que je n'ai rien ajouté à mon ordinaire.

Je n'aime pas la grande variété des mets; je m'inquiète peu qu'un repas ait un premier, un second service, des ragoûts de toute espèce, des entrées, des entremets.

Un repas simple excite bien plus l'appétit.

Je vous réponds qu'il y a long-temps que je n'ai dîné avec autant d'appétit.

Je vais donc faire servir le dessert.

Prenez ce qui vous plaira, des poires, des pommes, des petits gâteaux.

Je vais vous faire goûter du vin de Madère que j'ai acheté ces jours derniers.

Je bois à votre santé.

Je vous rends la pareille.

Ce vin est délicieux.

Levons-nous de table.

I thank you.

That fowl is delicious, I come to it again with pleasure.

Take some salad.

I am infinitely obliged to you; I cannot eat any more.

You do not eat; I am really ashamed to have offered you so indifferent a repast.

I beg your pardon, I have eaten a great deal, much more than I ought to have done, having eaten a meatbreakfast, and that later than common: I assure you I shall not be able to sup.

You see I have been as good as my word, and that I have not added any thing to my daily fare.

I do not like a great variety of dishes; I care very little whether there be a first and second course, ragouts of various kinds, a last course, and sweetmeats.

A plain repast whets the appetite much better.

I assure you it is a long time since I ate with so good an appetite.

I will then call for the dessert.

Take what you like, pears, apples, little cakes.

I am going to make you taste some Madera which I have lately bought.

Your health.

I return you the compliment.

This wine is delicious.

Let us rise from table.

DIALOGUE IV.

EN SE COUCHANT.

Il est fort tard.
Il est temps de s'aller coucher.
Je n'aime pas à veiller.
Je me sens grande envie de dormir.
Quand on est fatigué, on trouve le lit bon.
Pierre, donnez-moi mon bonnet de nuit.
Avez-vous bien fait mon lit aujourd'hui?
Oui, Monsieur, je l'ai bien remué.
Otez la courte-pointe.
Tirez les rideaux.
Fermez les volets de l'appartement.
Bassinez mon lit.
Monsieur, la bassinoire est cassée.
Je me couvrirai davantage.
Je vais me déshabiller et me mettre au lit.
Êtes-vous bien couvert?
Oui; vous pouvez vous retirer.
Laissez la chandelle; j'aime à avoir de la lumière dans ma chambre.
Si je ne m'endors pas tout de suite, je lirai.
Vous êtes à peine sur l'oreiller, que vous ronflez déjà.

Vous avez raison, je ne tarderai pas à dormir profondément.
Emportez la chandelle.
Éteignez la chandelle.
Apportez le briquet avec des allumettes et des pierres à feu.
Il n'y a pas d'amadou.

DIALOGUE IV.

GOING TO BED.

It is very late.
It is time to go to bed.
I do not like to sit up late.
I feel very much inclined to sleep.
When one is tired, one finds the bed comfortable.
Peter, give me my night-cap.
Have you made my bed well to-day?
Yes, Sir, I have shaken it well.
Take off the counterpane.
Draw the curtains.
Shut the shutters of the apartment.
Warm my bed.
Sir, the warmingpan is broken.
I will have more covering.
I am going to undress and get into bed.
Are you sufficiently covered?
Yes; you may withdraw.
Leave the candle; I like to have a light in my room.

If I do not fall asleep directly, I will read.

Your head is scarcely upon the pillow, when you begin to snore.

You are in the right, I shall not be long before I am in a sound sleep.

Take away the candle.
Put out the candle.
Bring the steel, with some matches and flints.

There is no tinder.

Je vais vous apporter le briquet phosphorique.
C'est bien.
Bonne nuit, Monsieur; je vous souhaite un bon repos.
N'oubliez pas de m'appeler de bon matin.
Il faut que je sorte à la pointe du jour.
Je n'y manquerai pas.

DIALOGUE V.

CHEZ UN RESTAURATEUR.

Il est temps de dîner.
Entrons chez un restaurateur.
Dînerons-nous dans un cabinet particulier?
Non : je crois qu'il vaut mieux diner dans le salon, à la carte ou au prix fixe; on est plus vite servi, et cela ne coûte pas si cher.
Garçon, la carte.
Que demandez-vous, Messieurs?
Donnez un potage et un consommé.
Vous êtes servi à l'instant.
Quel vin désirez-vous?
Une bouteille de vin de Mâcon.
Vous ferez apporter quatre douzaines d'huîtres bien fraîches.
J'aime mieux le pain ordinaire que le petit pain.
On peut vous satisfaire.
J'ai très-grand appétit.
Garçon, un beef-steak au naturel, et un beef-steak aux pommes de terre, ensuite un entrecôte à la sauce piquante et un canard aux petits pois.
Que voulez-vous pour rôti?

I will bring you the phosphorus.
That is right.
Good night, Sir; I wish you a good night's rest.
Do not forget to call me to-morrow betimes.
I must go out by break of day.
I will not fail.

—

DIALOGUE V.

AT AN EATING-HOUSE.

It is time to dine.
Let us go into an eating-house.
Shall we dine in a private room?
No: I think it would be better to dine in the public room, according to the bill of fare, or at a set price; one is served more expeditiously, and it does not cost so much.
Waiter, bring the bill of fare.
What do you wish to have, Gentlemen?
Bring some porridge, and gravy soup.
You shall be served directly.
What wine do you please to have?
A bottle of Macon wine.
Send for four dozen of oysters, very fresh.

I prefer common bread to bricks.
You can have it.
I have a very great appetite.
Waiter, a beef-steak, a beef-steak and potatoes, then an inter-rib with tart sauce, and a duck and peas.

What roast meat will you have?

Un gigot de mouton avec de la chicorée, et une poularde.
Comment trouvez-vous cette cuisine?
Fort bonne, je vous assure; mais le vin n'est pas bon.
C'est toujours ce qu'on a le plus de peine à avoir bon.
Il doit être insupportable pour ceux qui sont accoutumés à en boire dans le pays où il se récolte.
Que prendrons-nous pour dessert?
Choisissez, la carte est bien garnie.
Il y a des macarons, des biscuits, des fraises, des cerises, etc.
En voilà assez.
Faisons le compte de notre dépense.
Nous paierons en passant au comptoir.
Messieurs, n'oubliez pas le garçon.

DIALOGUE VI.

DANS UN CAFÉ.

Il fait très-chaud.
Je suis très-altéré; on sent le besoin de se rafraîchir.

Entrons dans un estaminet.
Je ne serai pas de votre compagnie; la fumée du tabac m'entête: je ne trouve pas de plaisir à envoyer une bouffée de fumée au nez de mon voisin.
Je vois bien que vous ne fumez pas; si vous aviez été marin ou soldat, vous n'auriez pas de plus grand plaisir que d'avoir la pipe ou le cigare à la bouche.
Entrons dans un café.
Que voulez-vous, Messieurs? des glaces, de la limonade?

A leg of mutton and endive, and a pullet.

How do you like this cookery?

Very well, I assure you; but the wine is not good.

That is what is always most difficult to get good.

It must be intolerable for those who are accustomed to drink wine in the country where it is made.

What shall we take for the dessert?

Choose, the bill of fare is copious.

There are macaroons, biscuits, strawberries, cherries, etc.

That is enough.

Let us see what the expence is.

We will pay at the bar as we go out.

Gentlemen, do not forget the waiter.

—

DIALOGUE VI.

IN A COFFEE-HOUSE.

It is very warm.

I am very thirsty; it is necessary to take something refreshing.

Let us step into a smoking-room.

You will not have my company; the smoke of tobacco affects my head : I see no pleasure in puffing a cloud of smoke into my neighbour's face.

I plainly perceive you do not smoke; had you been a sailor or a soldier, you would not know a greater pleasure than that of having a pipe or cigar in your mouth.

Let us step into a coffee-house.

What do you please to have, Gentlemen? ices, lemonade?

Donnez-nous de la bière.

Cette bière est fort bonne.

Elle ne mousse pas beaucoup.

C'est qu'elle est nouvelle.

Ne buvez pas trop vite, si vous avez chaud; cela vous fera mal.

La bière est aussi bonne, quand il fait chaud, que le café ou le punch quand il fait froid.

Le café est bon en tout temps.

C'est avec cela que je déjeune ordinairement.

Moi, je déjeune avec du chocolat au lait, et je prends une tasse de café à l'eau, sans sucre, après mon dîner.

Voulez-vous prendre quelque liqueur ?

Non, je vous remercie, cela m'échaufferait trop : je prendrai volontiers un verre d'orgeat ou de sorbet.

Et moi aussi.

Monsieur, pourriez-vous me passer cette gazette, quand vous l'aurez lue ?

Monsieur, la voici, je l'ai lue.

Qu'y a-t-il de nouveau aujourd'hui en politique ?

Je ne saurais vous le dire.

Je m'occupe fort peu de politique.

Je ne lis dans le journal que ce qui a rapport à la littérature, et surtout au théâtre.

Il y a souvent des articles de ce genre très-intéressans.

Il n'y a rien aujourd'hui dans le journal; depuis quelque temps, il n'y a pas beaucoup de nouveautés.

Nous ne sommes pas dans la saison ; tout le monde est à la campagne.

Nous en serons, je crois, bien dédommagés cet hiver.

On parle de beaucoup de pièces de théâtre, et surtout d'une prodigieuse quantité de romans.

Cela fournira de l'occupation aux journalistes, et amusera les désœuvrés.

Give us some beer.

This beer is very good.

It does not froth much.

That is because it is new.

Do not drink too fast, if you are warm, it will do you harm.

Beer is as good in warm weather as coffee or punch in cold.

Coffee is good at all times.

It is what I commonly take for breakfast.

I breakfast on milk chocolate, and take a cup of coffee, without either milk or sugar, after dinner.

Will you take any liquor?

No; I thank you, it would heat me too much: I will willingly take a glass of orgeat, or sherbet.

And I likewise.

Sir, will you be so kind as to hand me the news-paper, when you have read it?

There it is, Sir; I have read it.

What political news is there to-day?

I cannot tell you.

I trouble my head very little about politics.

I only read in the paper what relates to litterature, and particularly to the stage.

There are often very interesting articles of that kind.

There is nothing in the paper to-day; there has been scarce any thing new for some time past.

This is not the season; every body is in the country.

The winter, I believe, will make us amends.

There is question of several plays, and particularly of a prodigious number of novels.

That will give occupation to the journalists, and amuse the idle.

Continuons notre promenade.
J'ai payé au garçon.

—

DIALOGUE VII.

POUR VOIR LA VILLE.

Je vous prie de me faire voir ce que la ville contient de remarquable.

Ce sera avec beaucoup de plaisir; je vais d'abord vous montrer le chemin de la promenade publique.

Prenons le chemin le plus facile à reconnaître, afin que je ne me trompe pas quand je voudrai aller seul.

En sortant de cette rue-ci, prenez le quai à droite; quand vous serez au bout, vous trouverez une rue très-large qui vous conduira à la place publique, et là, vous verrez en face une rue qui va aboutir tout droit à la promenade.

Le pont est très-beau; il a neuf arches, et est construit de superbes pierres de taille.

Il est très-plat, et les trottoirs pour les piétons sont larges.

De l'autre côté de la rivière, est un faubourg.

Les rues sont bien alignées et bien pavées.

Elles sont aussi fort propres; des égouts de distance en distance, et des canaux souterrains reçoivent les eaux, et les immondices sont enlevées avec soin.

Les maisons paraissent toutes construites en briques et en plâtre.

Il y en a peu de construites en pierres et en bois, parce que ces deux espèces de matériaux sont rares dans ce pays-ci.

La ville est toute sur la rive droite du fleuve.

Let us continue our walk.

I have paid the waiter.

—

DIALOGUE VII.

TO SEE THE TOWN.

I will thank you to show me whatever is remarkable in the town.

With great pleasure; I will first show you the way to the public walk.

Let us take the road the most easy to be know again, that I may not mistake when I wish to go alone.

At the end of this street, take the quay to the right; when you are at the end of that, you will find a very wide street which will lead you to the public square, and there you will see, fronting you, a street which leads directly to to the walk.

The bridge is very handsome; it has nine arches, and is built of beautiful freestone.

It is very level, and the foot-pavement is very broad.

On the other side of the river, are suburbs.

The streets are very straight and well paved.

They are also very clean; sewers at proper distances, and subterraneous conduits receive the waters, and the dirt is cleared away with care.

The houses appear to be all built of brick or plaster.

There are but few built of stone or wood, because those two materials are scarce in this country.

The whole city stands on the right bank of the river.

Combien a-t-elle de circuit ?

Deux lieues; elle est fort peuplée, et ne contient presque pas de jardins et d'espaces vagues.

La cathédrale est ouverte ; entrons-y.

C'est un chef-d'œuvre d'architecture gothique.

Remarquez la beauté du chœur, le buffet d'orgues, la chaire à prêcher, le banc d'œuvre.

Les sculptures et les ciselures sont admirables.

Cette chapelle est revêtue de marble blanc.

Voyez ces belles statues en bronze et en albâtre, et celle-ci de la Vierge en argent.

Les peintures sur les vîtres sont d'une grande perfection.

Vous avez aussi des tableaux de grands maîtres.

L'extérieur est fort beau.

Le clocher est d'une hauteur prodigieuse, et les cloches sont fort belles.

La flèche va jusqu'aux nues.

Elle est de cuivre doré, et fait beaucoup d'effet au soleil.

Nous allons voir les autres monumens, tels que le Mont-de-Piété, le Jardin des Plantes, la Monnaie, la Bibliothèque, le Musée, etc.

Ce sera pour un autre jour; je suis fatigué.

Prenons une voiture pour nous en aller.

Cocher, attends-tu quelqu'un?

Non, Monsieur; je suis à votre service.

Me prenez-vous à l'heure ou à la course?

A la course; conduis-nous rue royale, n° 40.

DIALOGUE VIII.

POUR LOUER UN APPARTEMENT.

Avez-vous des appartemens et des chambres à louer dans cette maison?

What is it in circumference?

Two leagues; it is very populous, and has scarce any gardens or empty spaces.

The cathedral is open, let us go in.

It is a master-piece of gothic architecture.

Observe the beauty of the choir, the organ case, the pulpit, the churchwarden's pew.

The sculpture and fret-work are admirable.

This chapel is lined with white marble.

Observe those fine bronze and alabaster statues, and that silver statue of the Virgin.

The paintings on the window-glass are perfect.

You have also paintings by some of the great masters.

The outside is very handsome.

The steeple is of a prodigious height, and the bells are very fine.

The spire rises up into the clouds.

It is made of gilt copper, and produces a great effect when the sun shines on it.

We are going to see the other monuments, such as the Mont-de-piété, the botanic Garden, the Mint, the Library, the Museum, etc.

That must be for another time; I am tired.

Let us take a coach to return.

Coachman, are you waiting for any body?

No, Sir; I am at your service.

Do you take me by the hour, or by the fare?

By the fare; drive us to n° 40, Royal street.

DIALOGUE VIII.

TO TAKE AN APARTMENT.

Have you apartments and rooms to let in this house?

Oui, Monsieur; nous avons de grands et de petits appartemens, et des chambres garnies ou non garnies, à louer présentement ou pour le terme.

Il me faudrait seulement une chambre garnie et un cabinet.

Pourrait-on voir la chambre au premier étage sur le devant, ainsi que l'annonce l'écriteau qui est au-dessus de la porte?

Elle vient d'être louée; mais nous en avons une autre très-jolie sur le derrière, qui a vue sur le jardin.

Faites-la-moi voir; je pourrai m'en arranger de même.

Je vais prendre la clef et vous y conduire.

Quel est le prix de cette chambre au mois?

Le prix est de cent cinquante francs.

Ce prix est exorbitant; c'est à raison de cinq francs par jour.

Oui, Monsieur, et c'est très-bon marché.

Remarquez que cette chambre est grande, fraîchement décorée, que le papier de tenture est superbe, que la vue est très-belle, que les meubles sont à la mode et du dernier goût, et qu'elle est ornée de trois glaces.

Cela est vrai: la chambre me plaît beaucoup; mais le prix m'effraie.

Le cabinet de toilette est éclairé par une croisée.

La cheminée ne fume pas?

Non, Monsieur.

Où sont les latrines?

Vous avez des lieux à l'anglaise dans ce corridor à gauche.

Est-ce votre dernier prix?

Oui, Monsieur; il est impossible de diminuer la moindre chose; vous ne trouverez pas mieux ailleurs pour le même prix.

La maison a une très-belle apparence, et est très-bien tenue; on n'y entend jamais le moindre bruit.

Yes, Sir; we have great and little apartments, and furnished or unfurnished rooms, to be let now, or next quarter-day.

I only want a furnished room and a closet.

Can I see the front room on the first floor, which is mentioned in the bill over the door?

It has just been let; but we have another backwards, which is very pretty, and looks into the garden.

Let me see it; it may suit me as well.

I will take the key and show it you.

What is the rent of this room by the month?

A hundred and fifty franks.

That is an exorbitant rent: it is at the rate of five franks a day.

Yes, Sir; and it is very cheap.

Observe that this room is large, and newly decorated, that the paper is beautiful, the prospect very fine, the furniture fashionable and in the newest taste, and that there are three looking glasses.

That is true: I like the room very much, but the rent frightens me.

The dressing-closet has a window to it.

The chimney does not smoke?

No, Sir.

Where is the necessary?

You have a watercloset in that passage on the left.

Is it your last word?

Yes, Sir, it is impossible to abate the least trifle; you will not find any thing better elsewhere for the same price.

The house has a very respectable appearance and is very well kept; there is never the least noise to be heard in it.

La rue est très-large, et une des plus belles de Paris, au centre des affaires, près des *Tuileries*, du *Palais-Royal*, des *Boulevards* et des *Spectacles*.

La position est très-avantageuse.

Je trouve pourtant que vous la faites un peu trop valoir.

Vous avez de plus l'avantage de trouver dans la maison une pension bourgeoise dont la table est bien servie, et la société bien choisie.

Quel en est le prix?

Quatre-vingt-dix francs par mois pour le dîner seulement.

Ne pourrait-on pas s'arranger pour la pension et pour le logement?

Oui, Monsieur, en vous adressant au propriétaire de la maison, qui demeure au rez-de-chaussée.

Y est-il dans ce moment-ci?

Non, Monsieur; il est sorti. Si vous voulez l'attendre, il ne doit pas tarder à rentrer.

Je n'ai pas le temps; je repasserai plutôt ce soir.

The street is very wide, and one of the finest in Paris, in the centre of business, near the *Tuileries*, the *Palais-Royal*, the *Boulevarts*, and the *Theatres.*

The situation is very advantageous.

Yet I think you speak too highly of it.

You have moreover the advantage of finding in the house a family boarding-table which is well supplied, and frequented only by genteel company.

What is the price?

Ninety franks a month for the dinner only.

Could not one make an agreement for the board and lodging together?

Yes, Sir, by applying to the landlord, who lives on the groundfloor.

Is he at home now?

No, Sir; he is gone out. If you will wait for him, he shall shortly return.

I have no time; I will rather call again in the evening.

LETTER.

TO HIS GRACE THE DUKE OF BEDFORD.

September 19, 1769.

My Lord,

You are so little accustomed to receive any marks of respect or esteem from the public, that if, in the following lines, a compliment or expression of applause should escape me, I fear you would consider it as a mockery of your established character, and, perhaps, an insult to your understanding. You have nice feelings, my lord, if we may judge from your resentments. Cautious, therefore, of giving offence, where you have so little deserved it, I shall leave the illustration of your virtues to other hands. Your friends have a privilege to play upon the easiness of your temper, or, possibly, they are better acquainted with your good qualities than I am. You have done good by stealth. The rest is upon record. You have still left ample room for speculation, when panegyric is exhausted.

You are, indeed, a very considerable man. — The highest rank; a splendid fortune; and a name, glorious till it was yours, were sufficient to have supported you with meaner abilities than I think you possess. From the first, you derived a constitutional claim to respect; from the second, a natural extensive authority; the last created a partial expectation of hereditary virtues. The use you have made of these uncommon advantages might have been more honou-

rable to yourself, but could not be more instructive to mankind. We may trace it in the veneration of your country, the choice of your friends, and in the accomplishment of every sanguine hope which the public might have conceived from the illustrious name of Russell.

The eminence of your station gave you a commanding prospect of your duty. The road which led to honour, was open to your view. You could not lose it by mistake, and you had no temptation to depart from it by design.—Compare the natural dignity and importance of the richest peer of England; the noble independence which he might have maintained in parliament; and the real interest and respect which he might have acquired, not only in parliament, but through the whole kingdom; compare these glorious distinctions with the ambition of holding a share in government, the emoluments of a place, the sale of a borough, or the purchase of a corporation; and though you may not regret the virtues which create respect, you may see with anguish how much real importance and authority you have lost. Consider the character of an independent, virtuous Duke of Bedford; imagine what he might be in this country; then reflect one moment upon what you are. If it be possible for me to withdraw my attention from the fact, I will tell you in theory what such a man might be.

Conscious of his own weight and importance, his conduct in parliament would be directed by nothing but the constitutional duty of a peer. He would consider himself as a guardian of the laws. Willing to support the just measures of government, but determined to observe the conduct of the minister with suspicion; he would oppose the violence of faction with as much firmness as the encroachments of prerogative. He would be as little capable of bargaining with the minister for places for himself, or his dependants, as of descending to mix himself in the intri-

gues of opposition. Whenever an important question called for his opinion in parliament, he would be heard by the most profligate minister with deference and respect. His authority would either sanctify or disgrace the measure of government. The people would look up to him as to their protector; and a virtuous prince would have one honest man in his dominions, in whose integrity and judgment he might safely confide. If it should be the will of Providence to afflict him with a domestic misfortune, he would submit to the stroke with feeling, but not without dignity. He would consider the people as his children, and receive a generous, heart-felt consolation, in the sympathizing tears and blessing of his country.

Your grace may probably discover something more intelligible in the negative part of this illustrious character. The man I have described would never prostitute his dignity in parliament, by an indecent violence, either in opposing or defending a minister. He would not at one moment rancorously persecute, at another basely cring, to the favourite of his Sovereign. After outraging the royal dignity with peremptory conditions, little short of menace and hostility, he would never descend to the humility of soliciting an interview with the favourite, and offering to recover, at any price, the honour of his friendship. Though deceived, perhaps, in his youth, he would not, through the course of a long life, have invariably chosen his friends from among the most profligate of mankind. His own honour would have forbidden him from mixing his private pleasures or conversation with jockeys, gamesters, blasphemers, gladiators, or buffoons. He would then have never felt, much less would he have submitted to, the humiliating, dishonest necessity of engaging in the interests and intrigues of his dependants; of supplying their vices, or relieving their beggary, at the expense of his country. He

would not have betrayed such ignorance, or such contempt, of the constitution, as openly to avow, in a court of justice, the purchase and sale of a borough. He would not have thought it consistent with his rank in the state, or even with his personal importance, to be the little tyrant of a little corporation. He would never have been insulted with virtues which he had laboured to extinguish; nor suffered the disgrace of a mortifying defeat, which has made him ridiculous and contemptible even to the few by whom he was not detested. I reverence the afflictions of a good man: his sorrows are sacred. But how can we take part in the distresses of a man whom we can neither love nor esteem; or feel for a calamity of which he himself is sensible? Where was the father's heart, when he could look for, or find, an immediate consolation for the loss of an only son, in consultations and bargains for a place at court, and even in the misery of balloting at the India House!

Admitting, then, that you have mistaken or deserted those honourable principles which ought to have directed your conduct; admitting that you have as little claim to private affection as to public esteem, let us see with what abilities, with what degree of judgment, you have carried your own system into execution. A great man, in the success, and even in the magnitude, of his crimes, finds a rescue from contempt. Your grace is every way unfortunate. Yet I will not look back to those ridiculous scenes, by which, in your earlier days, you thought it an honour to be distinguished; the recorded stripes, the public infamy, your own sufferings, or Mr Rigby's fortitude. These events undoubtedly left an impression, though not upon your mind. To *such* a mind, it may, perhaps, be a pleasure to reflect, that there is hardly a corner of any of his Majesty's kingdoms, except France, in which, at one time or other, your valuable life has not been in danger. Amiable man! we see

and acknowledge the protection of Providence, by which you have so often escaped the personal detestation of your fellow-subjects, and are still reserved for the public justice of your country.

Your history begins to be important at that auspicious period, at which you were deputed to represent the Earl of Bute at the court of Versailles. It was an honourable office, and executed with the same spirit with which it was accepted. Your patrons wanted an ambassador who would submit to make concessions, without daring to insist upon any honourable condition for his sovereign. Their business required a man who had as little feeling for his own dignity, as for the welfare of his country; and they found him in the first rank of the nobility. Belleisle, Goree, Guadaloupe, St Lucia, Martinique, the Fishery, and the Havannah, are glorious monuments of your grace's talents for negociation. My lord, we are too well acquainted with your pecuniary character, to think it possible that so many public sacrifices should have been made without some private compensations. Your conduct carries with it an internal evidence, beyond all the legal proofs of a court of justice. Even the callous pride of Lord Egremont was alarmed. He saw and felt his own dishonour in corresponding with you: and there certainly was a moment at which he meant to have resisted, had not a fatal lethargy prevailed over his faculties, and carried all sense and memory away with it.

I will not pretend to specify the secret terms on which you were invited to support an administration which Lord Bute pretended to leave in full possession of their ministerial authority, and perfectly masters of themselves. He was not of a temper to relinquish power, though he retired from employment. Stipulations were certainly made between your grace and him, and certainly violated. After two years' submission, you thought you had collected a strength

sufficient to control his influence, and that it was your turn to be a tyrant, because you had been a slave. When you found yourself mistaken in your opinion of your gracious master's firmness, disappointment got the better of all your humble discretion, and carried you to an excess of outrage to his person, as distant from true spirit, as from all decency and respect. After robbing him of the rights of a king, you would not permit him to preserve the honour of a gentleman. It was then Lord Weymouth was nominated to Ireland, and despatched (we well remember with what indecent hurry) to plunder the treasury of the first fruits of an employment, which you well knew he was never to execute.

This sudden declaration of war against the favourite, might have given you a momentary merit with the public, if it had either been adopted upon principle, or maintained with resolution. Without looking back to all your former servility, we need only observe your subsequent conduct, to see upon what motives you acted. Apparently united with Mr Grenville, you waited until Lord Rockingham's feeble administration should dissolve in its own weakness. The moment their dismission was suspected, the moment you perceived that another system was adopted in the closet, you thought it no disgrace to return to your former dependence, and solicit once more the friendship of Lord Bute. You begged an interview, at which spirit enough to treat you with contempt.

It would now be of little use to point out by what a train of weak, injudicious measures, it became necessary, or was thought so, to call you back to a share in the administration. The friends, whom you did not in the last instance desert, were not of a character to add strength or credit to government: and, at that time, your alliance with the Duke of Grafton was, I presume, hardly foreseen. We must look for other stipulations to account for that sudden

resolution of the closet, by which three of your dependants (whose characters, I think, cannot be less respected than they are) were advanced to offices, through which you might again control the minister, and probably engross the whole direction of affairs.

The possession of absolute power is now once more within your reach. The measures you have taken to obtain and confirm it, are too gross to escape the eyes of a discerning, judicious Prince. His palace is besieged; the lines of circumvallation are drawing round him; and, unless he finds a resource in his own activity, or in the attachment of the real friends of his family, the best of princes must submit to the confinement of a state prisoner, until your grace's death, or some less fortunate event shall raise the siege. For the present you may safely resume that style of insult and menace, which even a private gentleman cannot submit to hear without being contemptible. Mr Mackenzie's history is not yet forgotten; and you may find precedents enough of the mode in which an imperious subject may signify his pleasure to his sovereign. Where will this gracious monarch look for assistance, when the wretched Grafton could forget his obligations to his master, and desert him for a hollow alliance with *such* a man as the Duke of Bedford!

Let us consider you, then, as arrived at the summit of worldly greatness; let us suppose that all your plans of avarice and ambition are accomplished, and your most sanguine wishes gratified in the fear, as well as the hatred of the people. Can age itself forget that you are now in the last act of life? Can gray hairs make folly venerable? And is there no period to be reserved for meditation and retirement? For shame! my lord, let it not be recorded of you, that the latest moments of your life were dedicated to the same unworthy pursuits, the same busy agitations,

in which your youth and manhood were exhausted. Consider that, although you cannot disgrace your former life, you are violating the character of age, and exposing the impotent imbecility, after you have lost the vigour of the passions.

Your friends will ask, perhaps whither shall this unhappy old man retire? Can he remain in the metropolis, where his life has been so often threatened, and his palace so often attacked? If he returns to Wooburn, scorn and mockery await him. He must create a solitude round his estate, if he would avoid the face of reproach and derision. At Plymouth, his destruction would be more than probable; at Exeter, inevitable. No honest Englishman will ever forget his attachment, nor any honest Scotchman forgive his treachery to Lord Bute. At every town he enters, he must change his liveries and his name. Whichever way he flies, the *hue and cry* of the country pursues him.

In another kingdom, indeed, the blessings of his administration have been more sensibly felt; his virtues better understood: or, at worst, they will not, for him alone, forget their hospitality. As well might *Verres* have returned to Sicily. You have twice escaped, my lord, beware of a third experiment. The indignation of a whole people, plundered, insulted, and oppressed, as they have been, will not always be disappointed.

It is in vain, therefore, to shift the scene. You can no more fly from your enemies, than from yourself. Persecuted abroad, you look into your own heart for consolation, and find nothing but reproaches and despair. But, my lord, you may quit the field of business, though not the field of danger, and though you cannot be safe, you may cease to be ridiculous. I fear you have listened too long to the advice of those pernicious friends, with whose interests you have sordidly united your own, and for whom you have

sacrificed every thing that ought to be dear to a man of honour. They are still base enough to encourage the follies of your age, as they once did the vices of your youth. As little acquainted with the rules of decorum, as with the laws of morality, they will not suffer you to profit by experience, nor even to consult the propriety of a bad character. Even now they tell you, that life is no more than a dramatic scene, in which the hero should preserve his consistency to the last; and that, as you lived without virtue, you should die without repentance.

JUNIUS.

LETTER.

FOR THE PUBLIC ADVERTISER.

December 19, 1769.

When the complaints of a brave and powerful people are observed to increase in proportion to the wrongs they have suffered; when, instead of sinking into submission, they are roused to resistance, the time will soon arrive at which every inferior consideration must yield to the security of the sovereign, and to the general safety of the state. There is a moment of difficulty and danger, at which flattery and falsehood can no longer deceive, and simplicity itself can no longer be misled. Let us suppose it arrived: let us suppose a gracious, well-intentioned prince, made sensible at last, of the great duty he owes to his people, and of his own disgraceful situation: that he looks round him for assistance, and asks for no advice, but how to gratify the wishes and secure the happiness of his subjects. In these circumstances, it may be matter of curious *speculation* to consider, if an honest man were permitted to approach a king, in what terms he would address himself to his sovereign. Let it be imagined, no matter how improbable, that the first prejudice against his character is removed; that ceremonious difficulties of an audience are surmounted; that he feels himself animated by the purest and most honourable affections to his king and country; and that the great person whom he addresses, has spirit enough to bid him

speak freely, and understanding enough to listen to him with attention. Unacquainted with the vain impertinence of forms, he would deliver his sentiments with dignity and firmness, but not without respect.

Sir,

It is the misfortune of your life, and originally the cause of every reproach and distress which has attended your government, that you should never have been acquainted with the language of truth, until you heard it in the complaints of your people. It is not, however, too late to correct the error of your education. We are still inclined to make an indulgent allowance for the pernicious lessons you received in your youth, and to form the most sanguine hopes from the natural benevolence of your disposition. We are far from thinking you capable of a direct, deliberate purpose to invade those original rights of your subjects, on which all their civil and political liberties depend. Had it been possible for us to entertain a suspicion so dishonourable to your character, we should long since have adopted a style of remonstrance very distant from the humility of complaint. The doctrine inculcated by our laws, *That the king can do no wrong*, is admitted without reluctance. We separate the amiable, good-natured prince, from the folly and treachery of his servants and the private virtues of the man, from the vices of his government. Were it not for this just distinction, I know not whether your majesty's condition, or that of the English nation, would deserve most to be lamented. I would prepare your mind for a favourable reception of truth, by removing every painful, offensive idea of personal reproach. Your subjects, sir, wish for nothing but that, as *they* are reasonable and affectionate enough to separate your person from your government, so *you*, in your turn, should distinguish between the conduct

which becomes the permanent dignity of a king, and that which serves only to promote the temporary interest and miserable ambition of a minister.

You ascended the throne with a declared, and, I doubt not, a sincere resolution of giving universal satisfaction to your subjects. You found them pleased with the novelty of a young prince, whose countenance promised even more than his words; and loyal to you, not only from principle but passion. It was not a cold profession of allegiance of the first magistrate, but a partial, animated attachment to a favourite prince, the native of their country. They did not wait to examine your conduct, nor to be determined by experience, but gave you a generous credit for the future blessings of your reign, and paid you in advance the dearest tribute of their affections. Such, sir, was once the disposition of a people, who now surround your throne with reproaches and complaints. — Do justice to yourself. Banish from your mind those unworthy opinions, with which some interested persons have laboured to possess you. — Distrust the men who tell you that the English are naturally light and inconstant; that they complain without a cause. Withdraw your confidence equally from all parties; from ministers, favourites, and relations; and let there be one moment in your life, in which you have consulted your own understanding.

When you affectedly renounced the name of Englishman, believe me, sir, you were persuaded to pay a very ill-judged compliment to one part of your subjects, at the expense of another. While the natives of Scotland are not in actual rebellion, they are undoubtedly entitled to protection: nor do I mean to condemn the policy of giving some encouragement to the novelty of their affections for the House of Hanover. I am ready to hope for every thing from their new-born zeal, and from the future steadiness of

their allegiance; but hitherto, they have no claim to your favour. To honour them with a determined predilection and confidence, in exclusion of your English subjects, who placed your family, and, in spite of treachery and rebellion, have supported it upon the throne, is a mistake too gross, even for the unsuspecting generosity of youth. In this error, we see a capital violation of the most obvious rules of policy and prudence. We trace it, however, to an original bias in your education, are ready to allow for your inexperience.

To the same early influence we attribute it, that you have descended to take a share, not only in the narrow views and interests of particular persons, but in the fatal malignity of their passions. At your accession to the throne, the whole system of government was altered, not from wisdom or deliberation, but because it had been adopted by your predecessor. A little personal motive of pique and resentment was sufficient to remove the ablest servants of the crown; but it is not in this country, sir, that such men can be dishonoured by the frowns of a king. They were dismissed, but could not be disgraced. Without entering into a minuter discussion of the merits of the peace, we may observe, in the imprudent hurry with which the first overtures from France were accepted, in the conduct of the negociation, and terms of the treaty, the strongest marks of that precipitate spirit of concession, with which a certain part of your subjects have been at all times ready to purchase a peace with the natural enemies of this country. On *your* part we are satisfied, that every thing was honourable and sincere; and if England was sold to France, we doubt not but your majesty was equally betrayed. The conditions of the peace were matter of grief and surprise to your subjects, but not the immediate cause of their present discontent.

Hitherto, sir, you had been sacrificed to the prejudices and passions of others. With what firmness will you bear the mention of your own?

A man, not very honourably distinguished in the world, commences a formal attack upon your favourite, considering nothing but how he might best expose his person and principles to detestation, and the national character of his countrymen to contempt. The natives of that country, sir, are as much distinguished by a peculiar character, as by your majesty's favour. Like another chosen people, they have been conducted into the land of plenty, where they find themselves effectually marked, and divided from mankind. There is hardly a period at which the most irregular character may not be redeemed. The mistakes of one sex find a retreat in patriotism, those of the other in devotion. Mr Wilkes brought with him into politics the same liberal sentiments by which his private conduct had been directed; and seemed to think, that, as there are few excesses in which an English gentleman may not be permitted to indulge, the same latitude was allowed him in the choice of his political principles, and in the spirit of maintaining them. I mean to state, not entirely to defend, his conduct. In the eanestness of his zeal, he suffered some unwarrantable insinuations to escape him. He said more than moderate men would justify; but not enough to entitle him to the honour of your majesty's personal resentment. The rays of royal indignation collected upon him, served ouly to illuminate, and could not consume. Animated by the favour of the people on one side, and heated by persecution on the other, his views and sentiments changed with his situation. Hardly serious at first, he is now an enthusiat. The coldest bodies warm with opposition, the hard sparkle in collision. There is a holy mistaken zeal in politics, as well as in religion. By persuading others, we convince ourselves.

The passions are engaged, and create a maternal affection in the mind, which forces us to love the cause for which we suffer. Is this a contention worthy of a king? Are you not sensible how much the meanness of the cause gives an air of ridicule to the serious difficulties into which you have been betrayed? The destruction of one man has been now, for many years, the sole object of your government; and, if there can be any thing still more disgraceful, we have seen for such an object, the utmost influence of the executive power, and every ministerial artifice, exerted without success. Nor can you ever succeed, unless *he* should be imprudent enough to forfeit the protection of those laws to which you owe your crown; or unless your ministers should persuade you to make it a question of force alone, and try the whole strength of government in opposition to the people The lessons *he* has rceeived from experience, will probably guard him from such excess of folly; and, in your majesty's virtues, we find an unquestionable assurance, that no illegal violence will be attempted.

Far from suspecting you of so horrible a design, we would attribute the continued violation of the laws, and even this last enormous attack upon the vital principles of the constitution, to an ill-advised, unworthy, personal resentment. From one false step you have been betrayed into another; and, as the cause was unworthy of you, your ministers were determined that the prudence of the execution should correspond with the wisdom and dignity of the design. They have reduced you to the necessity of choosing out of a variety of difficulties; to a situation so unhappy, that you can neither do wrong without ruin, nor right it without affliction. These worthy servants have undoubtedly given you many singular proofs of their abilities. Not contented with making Mr Wilkes a man of importance, they have judieiously transferred the

question from the rights aud interests of one man, to the most important rights and interests of the people; and forced your subjects, from wishing well to the cause of an individual, to unite with him in their own. Let them proceed as they have begun, and your majesty need not doubt that the catastrophe will do no dishonour to the conduct of the piece.

The circumstances to which you are reduced, will not admit of a compromise with the English nation. Undecisive, qualifying measures, will disgrace your government still more than open violence, and without satisfying the people, will excite their contempt. They have too much understanding and spirit to accept of an indirect satisfaction for a direct injury. Nothing less than a repeal, as formal as the resolution itself, can heal the wound which has been given to the constitution, nor will any thing less be accepted. I can readily believe, that there is an influence sufficient to recall that pernicious vote. The house of commons undoubtedly consider their duty to the crown as paramount to all other obligations. To *us* they are only indebted for an accidental existence, and have justly transferred their gratitude from their parents to their benefactors; from those who gave them birth, to the minister, from whose benevolence they derive the comforts and pleasure of their political life; who has taken the tenderest care of their infancy, and relieves their necessities without offending their delicacy. But, if it were possible for their integrity to be degraded to a condition so vile and abject, that compared with it, the present estimation they stand in is a state of honour and respect, consider, sir, in what manner you will afterwards proceed. Can you conceive that the people of this country will long submit to be governed by so flexible a house of commons? It is not in the nature of human society, that any form of government, in such circumstances,

can long be preserved. In ours, the general contempt of the people is as fatal as their detestation. Such, I am persuaded, would be the necessary effect of any base concession made by the present house of commons; and as a qualifying measure would not be accepted, it remains for you to decide, whether you will, at any hazard, support a set of men who have reduced you to this unhappy dilemma, or whether you will gratify the united wishes of the whole people of England, by dissolving the parliament.

Taking it for granted, as I do very sincerely, that you have personnally no design against the constitution, nor any views inconsistent with the good of your subjects, I think you cannot hesitate long upon the choice which it equally concerns your interest and your honour to adopt. On one side, you hazard the affections of all your English subjects; you relinquish every hope of repose to yourself, and you endanger the establishment of your family for ever. All this you venture for no object whatsoever; or for such an object as it would be an affront to you to name. Men of sense will examine your conduct with suspicion; while those who are incapable of comprehending to what degree they are injured, afflict you with clamours equally insolent and unmeaning. Supposing it possible that no fatal struggle should ensue, you determine, at once to be unhappy without the hope of a compensation either from interest or ambition. If an English king be hated or despised, he *must* be unhappy: and this perhaps is the only political truth which he ought to be convinced of without experiment. But, if the English people should no longer confine their resentment to a submissive representation of their wrongs; if, following the glorious example of their ancestors, they should no longer appeal to the creature of the constitution, but to that high Being who gave them the rights of humanity, whose gifts it were sacrilege to surrender, let me ask you,

sir, upon what part of your subjects would you rely fo assistance?

The people of Ireland have been uniformly plundered and oppressed. In return they give you every day fresh marks of their resentment. — They despise the miserable governor you have sent them, because he his the creature of Lord Bute: nor is it from any natural confusion in their ideas, that they are so ready to confound the original of a king, with the disgraceful representation of him.

The distance of the colonies would make it impossible for them to take an active concern in your affairs, if they were as well affected to your government, as they once pretended to be to your person. They were ready enough to distinguish between *you* and your ministers. They complain of an act of the legislature, but traced the origin of it no higher than to the servants of the crown: they pleased themselves with the hope that their sovereign, if not favourable to their cause, at least was impartial. The decisive, personal part you took against them, has effectually banished that first distinction from their minds. They consider you as united with your servants against America; and know how to distinguish the Sovereign and a venal parliament on one side, from the real sentiments of the English people on the other. Looking forward to independence, they might possibly receive you for their king; but, if ever you retire to America, be assured they will give you such a convenant to digest, as the presbytery of Scotland would have been ashamed to offer to Charles the Second. They left their native land in search of freedom, and found it in a desert. Divided as they are, into a thousand forms of policy and religion, there is one point in which they all agree: — they equally detest the pageantry of a king, and the supercilious hypocrisy of a bishop.

It is not, then, from the alienated affections of Ireland

or America, that you can reasonably look for assistance; still less from the people of England, who are actually contending for their rights, and in this great question are parties against you. You are not, however, destitute of every appearence of support: you have all the Jacobites, Nonjurors, Roman Catholics, and Tories of this country, and all Scotland, without exception. — Considering from what family you are descended, the choice of your friends has been singularly directed; and truly, sir, if you had not lost the Whig interest of England, I should admire your dexterity in turning the hearts of your enemies. Is it possible for you to place any confidence in men who, before they are faithful to you, must renounce every opinion, and betray every principle, both in church and state, which they inherit from their ancestors, and are confirmed in by their education? whose numbers are so inconsiderable that they have long since been obliged to give up the principles and language which distinguish them as a party, and to fight under the banners of their enemies? Their zeal begins with hypocrisy, and must conclude in treachery. At first they deceive; at last betray.

As to the Scotch, I must suppose your heart and understanding so biassed, from your earliest infancy, in their favour, that nothing less than *your own* misfortunes can undeceive you. You will not accept of the uniform experience of your ancestors; and when once a man is determined to believe, the very absurdity of the doctrine confirms him in his faith. A bigotted understanding can draw a proof of attachment to the House of Hanover, from a notorious zeal for the House of Stuart, and find an earnest of future loyalty in former rebellions. Appearances are, however, in their favour; so strongly, indeed, that one would think they had forgotten that you are their lawful king, and had mistaken you for a pretender to the crown. Let it be admitted, then,

that the Scotch are as sincere in their present professions, as if you wre, in reality, not an Englishman, but a Briton of the North. You would not be the first prince of their native country, against whom they have rebelled, nor the first whom they have basely betrayed. Have you forgotten, sir, or has your favourite concealed from you, that part of our history, when the unhappy Charles (and he, too, had private virtues) fled from the open, avowed indignation of his English subjects, and surrendered himself at discretion to the good faith of his own countrymen? Without looking for support in their affections as subjects, he applied only to their honour, as gentlemen, for protection. They received him, as they would your majesty, with bows, and smiles, and falsehood, and kept him until they had settled their bargain with the English parliament; then basely sold their native king to the vengeance of his enemies. This, sir, was not the act of a few traitors, but the deliberate treachery of a Scotch parliament, representing the nation. A wise prince might draw from it two lessons of equal utility to himself. On one side, he might learn to dread the undisguised resentment of a generous people, who dare openly assert their rights, and who, in a just cause, are ready to meet their sovereign in the field. On the other side, he would be taught to apprehend something far more formidable; a fawning treachery, against which no prudence can guard, no courage can defend. The insidious smile upon the cheek would warn him of the canker in the heart.

From the uses to which one part of the army has been too frequently applied, you have some reason to expect that there are no services they would refuse. Here, too, we trace the partiality of your understanding. You take the sense of the army from the conduct of the guards, with the same justice with which you collect the sense of the people from the representations of the ministry. Your

marching regiments, sir, will not make the guards their example, either as soldiers or subjects. They feel, and resent, as they ought to do, that invariable, undistinguishing favour with which the guards are treated; while those gallant troops, by whom every hazardous, every laborious service, is performed, are left to perish in garrisons abroad, or pine in quarters at home, neglected and forgotten. If they had no sense of the great original duty they owe their country, their resentment would operate like patriotism, and leave your cause to be defended by those to whom you have lavished the rewards and honours of their profession. The Prætorian bands, enervated and debauched as they were, had still strenght enough to awe the Roman populace; but when the distant legions took the alarm, they marched to Rome, and gave away the empire.

On this side, then, which ever way you turn your eyes, you see nothing but perplexity and distress. You may determine to support the very ministry who have reduced your affairs to this deplorable situation; you may shelter yourself under the forms of a parliament, and set your people at defiance; but, be assured, sir, that such a resolution would be as imprudent as it would be odious. If it did not immediately shake your establishment, it would rob you of your peace of mind for ever.

On the other, how different is the prospect! How easy, how safe and honourable is the path before you! The English nation declare they are grossly injured by their representatives, and solicit your majesty to exert your lawful prerogative, and give them an opportunity of recalling a trust, which they find has been scandalously abused. You are not to be told, that the power of the house of commons is not original, but delegated to them for the welfare of the people, from whom they receive it. A question of right arises between the constituent and the representative body. By what au-

thority shall it be decided? Will your majesty interfere in a question in which you have, properly, no immediate concern? It would be a step equally odious and unnecessary. Shall the lords be called upon to determine the rights and privileges of the commons? They cannot do it without a flagrant breach of the constitution. Or, will you refer it to the judges? They have often told your ancestors, that the law of parliament is above them. What party then remains, but to leave it to the people to determine for themselves? They alone are injured; and since there is no superior power to which the cause can be referred, they alone ought to determine.

I do not mean to perplex you with a tedious argument upon a subject already so discussed, that inspiration could hardly throw a new light upon it. There are, however, two points of view in which it particularily imports your majesty to consider the late procedings of the house of commons. By depriving a subject of his birthright, they have attributed to their own vote an authority equal to an act of the whole legislature; and though, perhaps, not with the same motives, have strictly followed the example of the long parliament, which first declared the regal office useless, and soon after, with as little ceremony, dissolved the house of lords.—The same pretended power which robs an English subject of his birthright, may rob an English king of his crown. In another view, the resolution of the house of commons, apparently not so dangerous to your majesty, is still more alarming to your people. Not contented with divesting one man of his right, they have arbitrarily conveyed that right to another. They have set aside a return as illegal, without daring to censure those officers who were particularly apprized of Mr Wilkes's incapacity, not only by the declaration of the house,'but expressly by the directed to them, and who, nevertheless, returned as duly elected. They

have rejected the majority of votes, the only criterion by which our laws judge of the sense of the people; they have transferred the right of election from the collective to the representative body; and by these acts, taken separately or together, they have essentially altered the original constitution of the house of commons. Versed, as your majesty undoubtedly is, in the English history, it cannot easily escape you, how much it is your interest, as well as your duty, to prevent one of the three estates from encroaching upon the province of the other two, or assuming the authority of them all. When once they have departed from the great constitutional line by which all their proceedings should be directed, who will answer for their future moderation? Or what assurance will they give you, that, when they have trampled upon their equals, they will submit to a superior? Your majesty may learn hereafter, how nearly the slave and tyrant are allied.

Some of your council, more candid than the rest, admit the abandoned profligacy of the present house of commons, but oppose their dissolution upon an opinion, I confess, not very unwarrantable, that their successors would be equally at the disposal of the treasury. I cannot persuade myself that the nation will have profited so little by experience. But, if that opinion were well founded, you might then gratify our wishes at an easy rate, and appease the present clamour against your government, without offering any material injury to the favourite cause of corruption.

You have still an honourable part to act. The affections of your subjects may still be recovered. But, before you subdue *their* hearts, you must gain a noble victory over your own. Discard those little, personal resentments, which have too long directed your public conduct. Pardon this man the remainder of his punishment; and, if resentment still prevails, make it, what it should have been long since,

an act, not of mercy, but contempt. He will soon fall back into his natural station—a silent senator, and hardly supporting the weekly eloquence of a newspaper. The gentle breath of peace would leave him on the surface, neglected and unremoved. It is only the tempest that lifts him from his place.

Without consulting your minister, call together your whole council. Let it appear to the public, that you can determine and act for yourself. Come forward to your people. Lay aside the wretched formalities of a king, and speak to your subjects with the spirit of a man, aud in the language of a gentleman. Tell them you have been fatally deceived. The acknowledgment will be no disgrace, but rather an honour to your understanding. Tell them you are determined to remove every cause of complaint against your government; that you will give your confidence to no man who does not possess the confidence of your subjects; and leave it to themselves to determine, by their conduct at a future election, whether, or no it be, in reality, the general sense of the nation, that their rights have been arbitrarily invaded by the present house of commons, and the constitution betrayed. They will then do justice to their representatives and to themselves.

These sentiments, sir, and the style they are conveyed in, may be offensive, perhaps, because they are new to you. Accustomed to the language of courtiers, you measure their affections by the vehemence of their expressions; and when they only praise you directly, you admire their sincerity. But this is not a time to trifle with your fortune. They deceive you, sir, who tell you that you have many friends, whose affections are founded upon a principle of personal attachment. The first foundation of friendship is not the power of conferring benefits, but the equality with which they are received, and *may* be returned. The fortune

which made you a king, forbade you to have a friend. It is a law of nature, which cannot be violated with impunity. The mistaken prince, who looks for friendship, will find a favourite, and in that favourite the ruin of his affairs.

The people of England are loyal to the House of Hanover; not from a vain preference of one family to another, but from a conviction, that the establishment of that family was necessary to the support of their civil and religious liberties. This, sir, is a principle of allegiance equally solid and rational; fit for Englishmen to adopt, and well worthy of your majesty's encouragement. We cannot long be deluded by nominal distinctions. The name of Stuart, of itself, is only conptemptible; armed with the sovereign authority, their principles are formidable. The Prince who imitates their conduct, should be warned by their example; and, while he plumes himself upon the security of his title to the crown, should remember, that, as it was acquired by one revolution, it may be lost by another.

JUNIUS.

SPEECH ON THE ABOLITION OF THE SLAVE-TRADE,

Of W. Pitt.

April 2, 1792.

At this hour of the morning I am afraid, sir, I am too much exhausted to enter so fully into the subject before the committee as I could wish; but if my bodily strength is in any degree equal tho the task, I feel so strongly the magnitude of this question, that I am extremely earnest to deliver my sentiments, which I rise to do with the more satisfaction, because I now look forward to the issue of this business with considerable hopes of success.

The debate has this day taken a turn, which, though it has produced a variety of new suggestions, has, upon the whole, contracted this question into a much narrower point than it was ever brought into before.

I cannot say that I quite agree with the right honourable gentleman over the way (Mr Fox). I am far from deploring all that has been said by my two honourable friends (Mr Dundas and the Speaker). I rather rejoice that they have now brought this subject to a fair issue, that something, at least, is already gained, and that the question has taken altogether a new course this night. It is true, a difference of opinion has been stated, and has been urged with all the force of argument that could be given to it. But give me leave to say, that this difference has been urged upon principles very far removed from those which were maintained by the opponents of my honourable friend when he first brought forward his motion. There are very few of those who have spoken this night who have not thought it

their duty to declare their full and entire concurrence with my honourable friend in promoting the abolition of the slave-trade, as their ultimate object. However we may differ as to the time and manner of it, we are agreed in the abolition itself; and my honourable friends have expressed their agreement in this sentiment with that sensibility upon the subject which humanity does most undoubtedly require. I do not, however, think they yet perceive what are the necessary consequences of their own concession, or follow up their own principles to their just conclusion.

The point now in dispute betwen us is, a difference merely as to the period of time at which the abolition of the slave-trade ought to take place. I therefore congratulate this house, the country, and the world, that this great point is gained; that we may now consider this trade as having received its condemnation; that its sentence is sealed; that this curse of mankind is seen by the house in its true light; and that the greatest stigma on our national character which ever yet existed is about to be removed! And, sir, (which is still more important) that mankind, I trust, in general, are now likely to be delivered from the greatest practical evil that ever has afflicted the human race from the severest and most extensive calamity recorded in the history of the world!

In proceeding to give my reasons for concurring with my honourable friend in his motion, I shall necessarily advert to those topics which my honourable friends near me have touched upon, and which they stated to be their motives for preferring a gradual, and, in some degree, a distant abolition of the slave-trade, to the more immediate and direct measure now proposed to you. Beginning as I do, with declaring, that in this respect I differ completely from my right honourable friends near me, I do not, however, mean to say, that I differ as to one observation

which has been pressed rather strongly by them. If they can show, that their proposition of a gradual abolition is more likely than ours to secure the object which we have in view — that by proceeding gradually we shall arrive more speedily at our end, and attain it with more certainty, than by a direct vote immediately to abolish: — if they can show to the satisfaction both of myself and the committee, that our proposition has more the appearance of a speedy abolition, than the reality of it; undoubtedly they will in this case make a convert of me, and my honourable friend who moved the question; they will make a convert of every man among us, who looks to this, which I trust we all do, as a question not to be determined by theoretical principles or enthusiastic feelings, but considers the practicability of the measure — aiming simply to effect his object in the shortest time, and in the surest possible manner.

If, however, I shall be able to show that our measure proceeds more directly to its object, and secures it with more certainty and within a less distant period; and that the slave-trade will on our plan be abolished sooner than on his; may I not then hope, that my right honourable friends will be as ready to adopt our proposition, as we should in the other case be willing to accede to theirs?

One of my right honourable friends has stated, that an act passed here for the abolition of the slave-trade would not secure its abolition. Now, sir, I should be glad to know, why an act of the British legislature, enforced by all those sanctions which we have undoubtedly the power and the right to apply, is not to be effectual; at least as to every material purpose? Will not the executive power have the same appointment of the officers and the courts of judicature, by which all the causes relating to this subject must be tried, that it has in other cases? Will there not be the same system of law by which we now maintain a mono-

poly of commerce? If the same law, sir, be applied in the prohibition of the slave-trade, which is applied in the case of other contraband commerce, with all the same means of the country to back it, I am at a loss to know why the actual and total abolition is not as likely to be effected in this way, as by any plan or project of my honourable friends, for bringing about a gradual termination of it. But my observation is extremely fortified by what fell from my honourable friend (Mr Jenkinson) who spoke last: he has told you, sir, that if you will have patience with it for a few years, the slave-trade must drop of itself, from the increasing dearness of the commodity imported, and the increasing progress, on the other hand, of internal population. Is it true, then, that the importations are so expansive and disadvantageous already, that the internal population is even now becoming a cheaper resource? I ask, then, if you leave to the importer no means of importation but by smuggling, and if, besides all the present disadvantages, you load him with all the charges and hazards of the smuggler, by taking care that the laws against smuggling are in this case watchfully and rigorously enforced, is there any danger of any considerable supply of fresh slaves being poured into the islands through this channel? And is there any real ground of fear' because a few slaves may have been smuggled in or out of the islands, that a bill will be useless and ineffectual on any such ground? The question under these circumstances will not bear a dispute.

Perhaps, however, my honourable friends may take up another ground, and say, « It is true your measure would shut out further importations more immediately; but we do not mean to shut them out immediately. We think it right, on grounds of general expediency, that they should not be immediately shut out. » Let us therefore now come to this question

of the expediency of making the abolition distant and gradual, rather than immediate.

The argument of expediency, in my opinion, like every other argument in this disquisition, will not justify the continuance of the slave-trade for one unnecessary hour. Supposing it to be in our power (which I have shown it is) to enforce the prohibition from this present time, the expediency of doing it is to me so clear, that, if I went on this principle alone, I should not feel a moment's hesitation. What is the argument of expediency stated on the other-side? It is doubted whether the deaths and births in the islands are as yet so nearly equal as to ensure the keeping up of a sufficient stock of labourers: in answer to this, I took the liberty of mentioning, in a former year, what appeared to me to be the state of population at that time. My observations were taken from documents which we have reason to judge authentic, and which carried on the face of them the conclusions I then stated: they were the clear, simple, and obvious result of a careful examination which I made into this subject, and any gentleman who will take the same pains may arrive at the same degree of satisfaction.

These calculations, however, applied to a period of time that is now four or five years past, births were then, in the general view of them, nearly equal to the deaths; and, as the state of population was shown, by a considerable retrospect, to be regularly increasing, an excess of births must before this time have taken place.

Another observation has been made as to the disproportion of the sexes: this, however, is a disparity which existed in any material degree only in former years; it is a disparity of which the slave-trade has been itself the cause; which will gradually diminish as the slave-trade diminishes,

and must entirely cease, if the trade shall be abolished; but which, nevertheless, is made the very plea for its continuance. I believe this disproportion of the sexes, taking the whole number in the islands, Creole as well as imported Africans, the latter of whom occasion all the disproportion, is not now by any means considerable.

But, sir, I also showed, that the great mortality which turned the balance so as to make the deaths appear more numerous than the births, arose too from the imported Africans, who die in extraordinary numbers in the seasoning. If, therefore, the importation of negroes should cease, every one of the causes of mortality, which I have now stated, would cease also. Nor can I conceive any reason why the present number of labourers should not maintain itself in the West Indies, except it be from some artificial cause, some fault in the islands; such as the impolicy of their governors, or the cruelty of the managers and officers whom they employ.

I will not reiterate all that I said at that time, or go through island by island. It is true, there is a difference in the ceded islands; and I state them possibly to be, in some respects, an excepted case. But, if we are to enter into the subject of the mortality in clearing new lands, this, sir, is undoubtedly another question; the mortality here is tenfold: and this is to be considered, not as the carry ing on of a trade, but as the setting on foot of slave-trade for the purpose of peopling the colony; a measure which I think will not now be maintained. I therefore desire gentleman to tell me fairly, whether the period they look to is notnow arrived? Whether, at this hour, the West Indies may not be declared to have actually attained a state in which they can maintain their population? and upon the auswer I murt necessarily receive, I think I could safely rest the whole of the question.

One honourable gentleman has rather ingeniously observed, that one or other of these two assertions of ours, must necessarily be false : that either the population must be decreasing, which we deny; or if the population is increaning, that the slaves must be perfectly well treated, (this being the cause of such population) which we deny also. That the population is rather increasing than otherwise, and also that the general treatment is by no means so good as it ought to be, are both points which have been separately proved by different evidences; nor are these two points so entirely incompatible. The ill treatment must be very great indeed, in order to diminish materially the population of any race of people. That it is not so extremely great as to do this, I will admit. I will even admit, if you please, that this charge may possibly have been sometimes exaggerated; and I certainly think, that it applies less and less as we come nearer to the present times.

But, let us see how this contradiction of ours, at it is thought, really stands, and how the explanation of it will completely settle our minds, on the point in question. Do the slaves diminish in numbers? It can be nothing but ill treatment that causes the diminution. This ill treatment the abolition must and will restrain. In this case, therefore, we ought to vote for the abolition. On the other hand, Do you choose to say that the slaves clearly increase in numbers? Then you want no importations, and, in this case also, you may safely vote for the abolition. Or, if you choose to say, as the third and only other case which can be put, and which perhaps is the nearest to the truth, that the population is nearly stationary, and the treatment neither so bad nor so good as it might be; then surely, sir, it will not be denied, that this of all others, is, on each of the two grounds, the proper period for stopping further supplies :

for your population, which you own is already stationary, will thus be made undoubtedly to increase from the births and the good treatment of your present slaves, which I am now supposing is but very moderate, will be necessarily improved also by the same measure of abolition. I say, therefore, that these propositions, contradictory as they may be represented, are in truth not at all inconsistent, but even come in aid of each other, and lead to a conclusion that is decisive. And let it be always remembered, that in this branch of my argument, I have only in view the well-being of the West Indies, and do not now ground any thing on the African part of the question.

But, sir, I may carry these observations respecting the islands much further. It is within the power of the colonists, (and is it not then their indispensable duty?) to apply themselves to the correction of those various abuses, by which population is restrained. The most important consequences may be expected to attend colonial regulations for this purpose. With the improvement of internal population, the condition of every negro will improve also; his liberty will advance, or at least he will be approaching to a state of liberty. Nor can you increase the happiness, or extend the freedom of the negro, without adding in an equal degree to the safety of the islands, and of all their inhabitants. Thus, sir, in the place of *slaves*, who naturally have an interest directly opposite to that of their masters, and are therefore viewed by them with an eye of constant suspicion, you will create a body of valuable *citizens and subjects*, forming a part of the same community, having a common interest with their superiors, in the security and prosperity of the whole.

And, here let me add, that in proportion as you increase the happiness of these unfortunate beings, you will undoubtedly increase in effect the quantity of their labour

also. Gentlemen talk of the diminution of the labour of the islands! I will venture to assert that, even if in consequence of the abolition therewere to be some decrease in the number of hands, the quantity of work done, supposing the condition of the slaves to improve, would by no means diminish in the same proportion; perhaps would be far from diminishing at all. For if you restore to this degraded race the true feelings of men; if you take them out from among the order of brutes, and place them on a level with the rest of the human species; they will then work with that energy which is natural to men, and their labour will be productive, in a thousand ways, above what it has yet been; as the labour of a man is always more productive than that of a mere brute.

It generally happens, that in every bad cause some information arises out of the evidence of its defenders themselves, which serves to expose in one part or other the weakness of their defence. It is the characteristic of such a cause, that if it be at all gone into, even by its own supporters, it is liable to be ruined by the contradictions in which those who maintain it are for ever involved.

The committee of the privy council of Great Britain sent over certain queries to the West-India islands, with a view of elucidating the present subject; and they particularly inquired, whether the negroes had any days or hours allotted to them, in which they might work for themselves. The assemblies in their answers, with an air of great satisfaction, state the labour of the slaves to be moderate, and the West-India system to be well calculated to promote the domestic happiness of the slaves: They add, « that proprietors are not compelled by law to allow their slaves any part of the six working days of the week for themselves, but that it is the general practice to allow them one afternoon in every week out of crop time, which, with such hours as they choose to work on Sundays, is time amply

sufficient for their own purposes: » Now, therefore, will the negroes, or I may rather say, do the negroes work for their own emolument? I beg the committee's attention to this point: The assembly of Grenada proceeds to state — I have their own words for it — « That though the negroes are allowed the afternoons of only one day in every week, they will do as much work in that afternoon, when employed for their own benefit, as in the whole day when employed in their masters' service.»

Now, sir, I, will desire you to burn all my calculations; to disbelieve, if you please, every word I have said on the present state of population; nay, I will admit, for the sake of argument, that the numbers are decreasing, and the productive labour is at present insufficient for the cultivation of those countries: And I will then ask, whether the increase in the quantity of labour which is reasonably to be expected from the improved condition of the slaves, is not, by the admission of the islands themselves, by their admission not merely of an argument but a fact, far more than sufficient to counterbalance any decrease which can be rationnally apprehended from a defective state of their population. Why, sir, a negro, if he works for himself, and not for a master, will do double work! This is their own account. If you will believe the planters, if you will believe the legislature of the islands, the productive labour of the colonies would, in case the negroes worked as free labourers instead of slaves, be literally doubled. Half the present labourers, on this supposition, would suffice, for the whole cultivation of our islands on the present scale. I therefore confidently ask the house, whether, in considering the whole of this question, we may not fairly look forward to an improvement in the condition of these unhappy and degraded beings, not only as an event desirable on the ground of humanity and poli-

tical prudence, but also as a means of increasing very considerably indeed, (even without any increasing population,) the productive industry of the islands?

When gentlemen are so nicely balancing the past and future means of cultivating the plantations, let me request them to put this argument into the scale; and the more they consider it, the more will they be satisfied, that both the solidity of the principle which I have stated, and the fact which I have just quoted in the very words of the colonial legislature, will bear me out in every inference I have drawn. I think they will perceive also, that it is the undeniable duty of this house, on the grounds of true policy, immediately to sanction and carry into effect that system which ensures these important advantages; in addition to all those other inestimable blessing which follow in their train.

If, therefore, the argument of expediency, as applying to the West-India islands, is the test by which this question is to be tried, I trust I have now established this proposition, namely, that whatever tends most speedily and effectually to meliorate the condition of the slaves, is undoubtedly on the ground of expediency, leaving justice out of the question, the main object to be pursued.

That the immediate abolition of the slave-trade will most eminently have this effect, and that it is the only measure from which this effect can in any considerable degree be expected, are points to which I shall presently come; but before I enter upon them, let me notice one or two further circumstances.

We are told (and by respectable and well-informed persons) that the purchase of new negroes has been injurious instead of profitable to the planters themselves; so large a proportion of these unhappy wretches being found to perish in the seasoning. Writers well versed in this sub-

ject have been advised that, in order to remove the temptation which the slave-trade offers to expend large sums in this injudicious way, the door of importation should be shut.—This very plan which we now propose, the mischief of which is represented to be so great as to outweigh so many other momentous considerations, has actually been recommended by some of the best authorities, as a plan highly requisite to be adopted on the very principle of advantage to the islands; nay, not merely on that principle of general and political advantage on which I have already touched, but for the advantage of the very individuals who would otherwise be most forward in purchasing slaves. On the part of the West-Indians it is urged, « The planters are in debt : They are already distressed; if you stop the slave-trade they will be ruined. » Mr Long, the celebrated historian of Jamaica, recommends the stopping of importations, as a receipt for enabling the plantations which are embarrassed to get out of debt. I will quote his words. Speaking of the usurious terms on which money is often borrowed for the purchase of fresh slaves, he advises « the laying of a duty equal to a prohibition on all negroes imported for the space of four or five years, except for re-exportation. » « Such a law, » he proceeds to say, « would be attended with the following good consequences. It would put an immediate stop to these extortions; it would enable the planter to retrieve his affairs, by preventing him from running in debt, either by renting or purchasing negroes; it would render such recruits less necessary, by the redoubled care he would be obliged to take of his present stock, the preservation of their lives and health : And lastly, it would raise the value of negroes in the island.—A North-American province, by this prohibition alone for a few years, from being deeply plunged in debt, has become independent, rich, and flourishing. »

On this authority of Mr Long I rest the question, whether the prohibition of further importations is that rash, impolitic, and completely ruinous measure, which it is so confidently declared to be with respect to our West-Indian plantations.

I do not, however, mean, in thus treating this branch of the subject, absolutely to exclude the question of indemnification on the supposition of possible disadvantages affecting the West-Indies through the abolition of the slave-trade. But when gentlemen set up a claim of compensation merely on those general allegations, which are all that I have yet heard from them, I can only answer, let them produce their case in a distinct and specific form; and if upon any practicable or reasonable grounds it shall claim consideration, it will then be time enough for parliament to decide upon it.

I now come to another circumstance of great weight, connected with this part of the question. I mean the danger to which the islands are exposed from those negroes who are newly imported. This, sir, like the observation which I lately made, is no mere speculation of ours; for here again I refer you to Mr Long, the historian of Jamaica. He treats particularly of the dangers to be dreaded from the introduction of Coromantine negroes; an appellation under which are comprised several descriptions of negroes obtained on the Gold Coast, whose native country is not exactly known, and who are purchased in a variety of markets, having been brought from some distance inland. With a view of preventing insurrections, he advises, that « by laying a duty equal to a prohibition, no more of these Coromantines should be bought; » and after noticing one insurrection which happened through their means, he tells you of another in the following year, in which thirty-three Coromantines, « most of whom had been newly imported,

suddenly rose, and in the space of an hour murdered and wounded no less than nineteen white persons. »

To the authority of Mr Long, both in this and other parts of his work, I may add the recorded opinion of the committee of the house of assembly of Jamaica itself; who, in consequence of a rebellion among the slaves, were appointed to inquire into the best means of preventing future insurrections. The committee reported, « That the rebellion had originated (like most or all others) with the Coromantines; and they proposed that a bill should be brought in for laying a higher duty on the importation of these particular negroes, » which was intended to operate as a prohibition.

But the danger is not confined to the importation of Coromantines. Mr long, carefully investigating as he does the causes of such frequent insurrections, particularly at Jamaica, accounts for them from the greatness of its general importations. « In two years and a half, » says he, « 27,000 negroes have been imported, » = « No wonder we have rebellions! Twenty-seven thousand in two years and a half! » Why, sir, I believe that in some late years there have been as many imported into the same island within the same period! Surely, sir, when gentlemen talk so vehemently of the safety of the islands, and charge us with being so indifferent to it; when they speak of the calamities of St Domingo, and of similar dangers impending over their own heads at the present hour; it ill becomes *them* to be the person who are crying out for further importations. It ill becomes *them* to charge upon *us* the crime of stirring up insurrections — upon us who are only adopting the very principles, which Mr Long — which in part even the legislature of Jamaica itself, laid down in the time of danger, with an avowed view to the prevention of any such calamity.

The house, I am sure, will easily believe it is no small

satisfaction to me, that among the many arguments for prohibiting the slave-trade which crowd upon my mind, the security of our West-India possessions against internal commotions, as well as foreign enemies, is among the most prominent and most forcible. And here let me apply to my two right honourable friends, and ask them, whether in this part of the argument they do not see reason for *immediate* abolition! Why should you any longer import into those countries that which is the very seed of insurrection and rebellion? Why should you persist in introducing those latent principles of conflagration, which, if they should once burst forth, may annihilate in a single day the industry of a hundred years? Why will you subject yourselves, with open eyes, to the evident and imminent risk of a calamity, which may throw you back a whole century in your profits, in your cultivation, in your progress to the emancipation of your slaves? and disappointing at once every one of those golden expectations, may retard not only the accomplishment of that happy system which I have attempted to describe, but may cut off even your opportunity of taking any one introductory step? Let us begin from this time! Let us not commit these important interests to any further hazard! Let us prosecute this great object from this very hour! Let us vote that the abolition of the slave-trade shall be immediate, and not left to I know not what future time or contingency! Will my right honourable friends answer for the safety of the islands during any imaginable intervening period? Or do they think that any little advantages of the kind which they state, can have any weight in that scale of expediency in which this great question ought undoubtedly to be tried?

Thus stated, and thus alone, sir, can it be truly stated, to what does the whole of my right honourable friend's

arguments, on the head of expediency, amount? It amounts but to this: — The colonies on the one hand would have to struggle with some few difficulties and disadvantages at the first, for the sake of obtaining on the other hand immediate security to their leading interests; of ensuring, sir, even their own political existence; and for the sake also of immediately commencing that system of progressive improvement in the condition of the slaves, which is necessary to raise them from the state of brutes to that of rational beings, but which never can begin until the introduction of these new disaffected and dangerous Africans into the same gangs shall have been stopped.

If any argument can in the slightest degree justify the severity that is now so generally practised in the treatment of the slaves, it must be the introduction of these Africans. It is the introduction of these Africans that renders all idea of emancipation for the present so chimerical; and the very mention of it so dreadful. It is the introduction of these Africans that keeps down the condition of all plantation negroes. Whatever system of treatment is deemed necessary by the planters to be adopted towards these new Africans, extends itself to the other slaves also; instead therefore of deferring the hour when you will finally put an end to importations, vainly purposing that the condition of your present slaves should previously be mended, you must in the very first instance, stop your importations, if you hope to introduce any rational or practicable plan, either of gradual emancipation, or present general improvement.

Having now done with this question of expediency as affecting the islands, I come next to a proposition advanced by my right honourable friend (Mr Dundas), which appeared to intimate, that on account of some patrimonial rights of the West-Indians, the prohibition of the slave-

trade might be considered as an invasion on their legal inheritance.

Now, in answer to this proposition, I must make two or three remarks, which I think my right honourable friend will find some considerable difficulty in answering—First, I observe that his argument, if it be worth any thing, applies just as much to gradual as immediate abolition. I have no doubt, that at whatever period he should be disposed to say the abolition should actually take place, this defence will equally be set up; for it certainly is just as good an argument against an abolition seven, or seventy years hence, as against an abolition at this moment. It supposes, we have no right whatever to stop the importations; and even though the disadvantage to our plantations, which some gentlemen suppose to attend the measure of immediate abolition, should be admitted gradually to lessen by the lapse of a few years, yet in point of principle, the absence of all right of interference would remain the same. My right honourable friend, therefore, I am sure will not press an argument not less hostile to his proposition than to ours. But let us investigate the foundation of this objection, and I will commence what I have to say, by putting a question to my right honourable friend. It is chiefly on the presumed ground of our being bound by a parliamentary sanction heretofore given to the African slave-trade, that this argument against the abolition is rested. Does then my right honourable friend, or does any man in this house think, that the slave-trade has received such parliamentary sanction, as must place it more out of the jurisdiction of the legislature for ever after, than the other branches of our national commerce? I ask, is there any one regulation of any part of our commerce, which, if this argument be valid, may not equally be objected to, on the ground of its affecting some man's patrimony, some man's property, or

some man's expectations? Let it never be forgotten, that the argument I am canvassing would be just as strong, if the possession affected were small, and the possessors humble; for on every principle of justice, the property of any single individual, or small number of individuals, is as sacred, as that of the great body of West-Indians. Justice ought to extend her protection with rigid impartiality to the rich and to the poor, to the powerful and to the humble. If this be the case, in what a situation does my right honourable friend's argument place the legislature of Britain? What room is left for their interference in the regulation of any part of our commerce? It is scarcely possible to lay a duty on any one article, which may not, when first imposed, be said in some way to affect the property of individuals, and even of some entire classes of the community. If the laws respecting the slave-trade imply a contract for its perpetual continuance, I will venture to say, there does not pass a year without some act, equally pledging the faith of parliament to the perpetuating of some other branch of commerce. In short, I repeat my observation, that no new tax can be imposed, much less can any prohibitory duty be ever laid on any branch of trade, that has before been regulated by parliament, if this principle be once admitted.

Before I refer to the acts of parliament by which the public faith is said to be pledged, let me remark also, that a contract for the continuance of the slave-trade must, on the principles which I shall presently insist on, have been void, even from the beginning; for if this trade is an outrage upon justice, and only another name for fraud, robbery and murder, will any man urge that the legislature could possibly by any pledge whatever incur the obligation of being an accessory, or I may even say a principal, in the commission of such enormities, by sanctioning their

continuance? As well might an individual think himself bound by a promise to commit an assassination. I am confident, gentlemen must see, that our proceedings, on such grounds, would infringe all the principles of law, and subvert the very foundation of morality.

Let us now see, how far the acts themselves show that there is this sort of parliamentary pledge to continue the African slave-trade. The Act of 23 d Geo. II. c. 31, is that by which we are supposed to be bound up by contract to sanction all those horrors now so incontrovertibly proved. How surprised then, sir, must the house be to find, that by a clause of that very act, some of these outrages are expressly forbidden! It says, " No commander, or master of a ship, trading to Africa, shall by fraud, force, or violence, or by any indirect pratice whatsoever, take on board or carry away from the coast of Africa, any negro, or native of the said country, or commit any violence on the natives, to the prejudice of the said trade, and that every person so offending shall for every such offence forfeit.—,, When it comes to the penalty, sorry am I to say, that we see too close a resemblance to the West-Indialaw, which inflicts the payment of 30 *l.* as the punishment for murdering a negro. The price of blood in Africa is 100 *l*; but even this penalty is enough to prove that the act at least does not sanction, much less does it engage to perpetuate enormities; and the whole trade has now been demonstrated to be a mass, a system of enormities; of enormities which incontrovertibly bid defiance not only to this clause, but to every regulation which our ingenuity can devise, and our power carry into effect. Nothing can accomplish the object of this clause but an extinction of the trade itself.

But, sir, let us see what was the motive for carrying on the trade at all? The preamble of the act states it, « Whe-

reas the trade to and from Africa is very advantageous to Great Britain, and necessary for the supplying the plantations and colonies thereunto belonging with a sufficient number of negroes at reasonable rates, and for that purpose the said trade should be carried on,» etc.—Here then we see what the parliament had in view when it passed this act; and I have clearly shown that not one of the occasions on which it grounded its proceedings now exists. I may then plead, I think, the very act itself as an argument for the abolition. If it is shown, that instead of being « very advantageous » to Great Britain, this trade is the most destructive that can well be imagined to her interests; that it is the ruin of our seamen; that it stops the extension of our manufactures; if it is proved in the second place that it is not now necessary for the « supplying our plantations with negroes; » if it is further established that this traffic was from the very beginning contrary to the first principles of justice, and consequently that a pledge for its continuance, had one been attempted to have been given, must have been completely and absolutely void;—where then in this act of parliament is the contract to be found, by which Britain is bound, as she is said to be, never to listen to her own true interest, and to the cries of the natives of Africa? Is it not clear that all argument, founded on the supposed pledged faith of parliament, makes against those who employ it? I refer you to the principles which obtain in other cases. Every trade-act shows undoubtedly that the legislature is used to pay a tender regard to all classes of the community. But if for the sake of moral duty, national honour; or even of great political advantage, it is thought right, by authority of parliament, to alter any long-established system, parliament is competent to do it. The legislature will undoubtedly be careful to subject individuals to as little inconvenience as possible; and if any

peculiar hardship should arise, that can be distinctly stated and fairly pleaded, there will ever, I am sure, be a liberal feeling towards them in the legislature of this country, which is the guardian of all who live under its protection. On the present occasion, the most powerful considerations call upon us to abolish the slave-trade; and if we refuse to attend to them on the alleged ground of pledged faith and contract, we shall depart as widely from the practice of parliament, as from the path of moral duty. If indeed there is any case of hardship which comes within the proper cognizance of parliament, and calls for the exercise of its liberality,—well! But such a case must be reserved for calm consideration, as a matter distinct from the present question.

I beg pardon for dwelling so long on the argument of expediency, and on the manner in which it affects the West- Indies. I have been carried away by my own feelings in some of these points into a greater length than I intended, especially considering how fully the subject has been already argued. The result of all I have said is, that there exists no impediment, no obstacle, no shadow of reasonable objection on the ground of pledged faith, or even on that of national expediency, to the abolition of this trade. On the contrary, all the arguments drawn from those sources plead for it, and they plead much more loudly, and much more strongly in every part of the question for an immediate, than for a gradual abolition.

But now, sir, I come to Africa. That is the ground on which I rest, and here it is that I say my right honourable friends do not carry their principles to their full extent. Why ought the slave-trade to be abolished? Because it is incurable injustice. How much stronger then is the argument for immediate than gradual abolition! By allowing it to continue even for one hour, do not my right honoura-

ble friends weaken, do not they desert their own argument of its injustice? If on the ground of injustice it ought to be abolished at last, why ought it not now? Why is injustice to be suffered to remain for a single hour? From what I hear without doors, it is evident that there is a general conviction entertained of its being far from just; and from that very conviction of its injustice, some men have been led, I fear, to the supposition, that the slave-trade never could have been permitted to begin, but from some strong and irresistible necessity; a necessity, however, which, if it was fancied to exist at first, I have shown cannot be thought by any man whatever to exist now. This plea of necessity thus presumed, and presumed, as I suspect, from the circumstance of injustice itself, has caused a sort of acquiescence in the continuance of this evil. Men have been led to place it among the rank of those necessary evils which are supposed to be the lot of human creatures, and to be permitted to fall upon some countries or individuals rather than upon others, by that Being, whose ways are inscrutable to us, and whose dispensations, it is conceived, we ought not to look into. The origin of evil is indeed a subject beyond the reach of human understanding; and the permission of it by a Supreme Being, is a subject into which it belongs not to us to inquire. But where the evil in question is a moral evil which a man can scrutinize, and where that moral evil has its origin with ourselves, let us not imagine that we can clear our consciences by this general, not to say irreligious and impious way of laying aside the question. If we reflect at all on this subject, we must see that every necessary evil supposes that some other and greater evil would be incurred were it removed; I therefore desire to ask, what can be that greater evil, which can be stated to overbalance the one in question? — I know of no evil that ever has existed, nor can imagine any evil to exist,

worse than the tearing of seventy or eighty thousand persons annually from their native land by a combination of the most civilized nations inhabiting the most enlightened part of the globe, but more especially under the sanction of the laws of that nation which calls herself the most free and the most happy of them all. Even if these miserable beings were proved guilty of every crime before you take them off, (of which, however, not a single proof is adduced), ought we to take upon ourselves the office of executioners? And even if we condescend so far, still can we be justified in taking them, unless we have clear proof that they are criminals.

But if we go much further, — if we ourselves tempt them to sell their fellow-creatures to us, we may rest assured, that they will take care to provide by every methody, by nidnapping, by village-breaking, by uujust wars, by iniquitous condemnations, by rendering Africa a scene of bloodshed and misery, a supply of victims increasing in proportion to our demand. Can we then hesitate in deciding whether the wars in Africa are their wars or ours? It was our arms in the river Cameroon put into the hands of the trader, that furnished him with the means of pushing his trade; and I have no more doubt that they are British arms, put into the hands of Africans, which promote universal war and desolation, than I can doubt their having done so in that individual instance.

I have shown how great is the enormity of this evil, even on the supposition that we take only convicts and prisoners of war. But take the subject in the other way; take it on the grounds stated by the right honourable gentlemen over the way, and how does it stand? Think of EIGHTY THOUSAND persons carried away out of their country by we know not what means! for crimes imputed! for light or inconsiderable faults; for debt perhaps, for the crime witchcraft! or a

thousand other weak and scandalous pretexts; besides all the fraud and kidnapping, the villanies and perfidy, by which the slave-trade is supplied! Reflect on these eighty thousand persons thus annually taken off! There is something in the horror of it that surpasses all the bounds of imagination. Admitting that there exists in Africa something like to courts of justice; yet what an office of humiliation and meanness is it in us, to take upon ourselves to carry into execution the partial, the cruel, iniquitous sentences of such courts, as if we also were strangers to all religion, and so the first principles of justice! But that country, it is said, has been in some degree civilized, and civilized by us. It is said they have gained some knowledge of the principles of justice. What, sir, have they gained principles of justice from us? Their civilization brought about by us! Yes, we give them enough of our intercourse to convey to them the means, and to initiate then in the study, of mutual destruction. We give them just enough of the forms of justice to enable them to add the pretext of legal trials to their other modes of perpetrating the most atrocious iniquity. We give them just enough of European improvements to enable them the more effectually to turn Africa into a ravaged wilderness. Some evidences say that the Africans are addicted to the practice of gambling; that they even sell their wives and children, and ultimately themselves. Are these then the legitimate sources of slavery? Shall we pretend that we can thus acquire an honest right to exact the labour of these people? Can we pretend that we have a right to carry away to distant regions men of whom we know nothing by authentic inquiry, and of whom there is every reasonable presumption to think, that those who sell them to us, have no right to do so? But the evil does not stop here. I feel that there is not time for me to make all the remarks which the subject deserves, and I refrain from attempting

to enumerate half the dreadful consequences of this system. Do you think nothing of the ruin and the miseries in which so many other individuals, still remaining in Africa, are involved in consequence of carrying off so many myriads of people? Do you think nothing of their families which are left behind? of the connexions which are broken? of the friendships, attachments, and relationships that are burst asunder? Do you think nothing of the miseries in consequence, that are felt from generation to generation? of the privation of that happiness which might be communicated to them by the introduction of civilization, and of mental and moral improvement? A happiness which you withhold from them so long as you permit the slave-trade to continue. What do you know of the internal state of Africa? You have carried on a trade to that quarter of the globe from this civilized and enlightened country; but such a trade, that, instead of diffusing either knowledge or wealth, it has been the check to every laudable pursuit. Instead of any fair interchange of commodities; instead of conveying to them, from this highly favoured land, any means of improvement; you carry with you that noxious plant by which every thing is withered and blasted; under whose shade nothing that is useful or profitable to Africa will ever flourish or take root. Long as that continent has been known to navigators, the extreme line and boundaries of its coasts is all with which Europe is yet become acquainted; while other countries in the same parallel of latitude, through a happier system of intercourse, have reaped the blessings of a mutually beneficial commerce. But as to the whole interior of that continent you are, by your own principles of commerce, as yet entirely shut out: Africa is knwon to you only in its skirts. Yet even there you are able to infuse a poison that spreads its contagious effects from one end of it to the other, which pene-

trates to its very centre, corrupting every part to which it reaches. You there subvert the whole order of nature; you aggravate every natural barbarity, and furnish to every man living on that continent, motives for committing, under the name and pretext of commerce, acts of commerce, acts of perpetual violence and perfidy against his neighbour.

Thus, sir, has the perversion of British commerce carried misery instead of happiness to one whole quarter of the globe. False to the very principles of trade, misguided in our policy, and unmindful of our duty, what astonishing — I had almost said, what *irreparable* mischief, have we brought upon that continent! I would apply this thought to the present question. How shall we ever repair this mischief? How shall we hope to obtain, if it be possible, forgiveness from Heaven for those normous evils we have committed, if we refuse to make use of those means which the mercy of Providence hath still reserved to us for wiping away the guilt and shame with which we are now covered? If we refuse even this degree of compensation, if, knowing the miseries we have caused, we refuse even now to put a stop to them, how greatly aggravated will be the guilt of Great Britain! and what a blot will the history of these transactions for ever be in the history of this country! Shall we then DELAY to repair these injuries, and to begin rendering this justice to Africa? Shall we not count the days and hours that are suffered to intervene and to delay the accomplishment of such a work? Reflect, what an immense object is before you — what an object for a nation to have in view, and to have a prospect, under the favour of Providence, of being now permitted to attain! I think the house will agree with me in cherishing the ardent wish to enter without delay upon the measures necessary for these great ends: and I am sure that the immediate aboli-

tion of the slave-trade is the first, the principal, the most indispensable act of policy, of duty, and of justice, that the legislature of this country has to take, if it is indeed their wish to secure those important objects to which I have alluded, and which we are bound to pursue by the most solemn obligations.

There is, however, one argument set up as an universal answer to every thing that can be urged on our side; whether we address ourselves to gentlemen's understandings, or to their hearts and consciences. It is necessary I should remove this formidable objection; for though not often stated in distinct terms, I fear it is one which has a very wide influence. The slave-trade system, it is supposed, has taken so deep root in Africa, that it is absurd to think of its being eradicated; and the abolition of that share of trade carried on by Great Britain (and especially if her example is not followed by other powers) is likely to be of very little service. Give me leave to say, in answer to so dangerous an argument, that we ought to be extremely sure indeed of the assumption on which it rests, before we venture to rely on its validity; before we decide that an evil which we ourselves contribute to inflict is incurable, and on that very plea, refuse to desist from bearing our part in the system which produces it. You are not sure, it is said, that other nations will give up the trade, if you should renonce it. I answer, if this trade is as criminal as it is asserted to be, or if it has in it a thousandth part of the criminality, which I, and others, after thorough investigation of the subject, charge upon it, God forbid that we should hesitate in determining to relinquish so iniquitous a traffic; even though it should be retained by other countries! God forbid, however, that we should fail to do our utmost towards inducing other countries to abandon a bloody commerce which they have probably been in great measure led by our example to pursue! God forbid,

that we should be capable of wishing to arrogate to ourselves the glory of being singular in renoncing it!

I tremble at the thought of gentlemen's indulging themselves in this argument (an argument as pernicious as it is futile) which I am combating. « We are friends, » say they, « to humanity. We are second to none of you in our zeal for the good of Africa, — but the French will not abolish—the Dutch will not abolish. We wait, therefore, on prudential principles, till they join us, or set us an example. »

How, sir, is this enormous evil ever to be eradicated, if every nation is thus prudentially to wait till the concurrence of all the world shall have been obtained? — Let me remark too, that there is no nation in Europe that has, on the one hand, plunged so deeply into this guilt as Britain; or that is so likely, on the other, to be looked up to as an example, if she should have the manliness to be the first in decidedly renouncing it. But, sir, does not this argument opply a thousand times more strongly in a contrary way? How much more justly may *other* nations point to *us*, and say, « Why should we abolish the slave-trade when Great Britain has not abolished? Britain, free as she is, just and honourable as she is, and deeply also involved as she is in this commerce above all nations, not only has not abolished, but has refused to abolish it. — She has investigated it well; she has gained the completest insight into its nature and effects; she has collected volumes of evidence on every branch of the subject. Her senate has deliberated — has deliberated again and again—and what is the result? She has gravely and solemnly determined to sanction the slave-trade. She sanctions it at least for a while — her legislature, therefore, it is plain, sees no guilt in it, and has thus furnished us with the strongest evidence that she can furnish, — of the justice unquestionably, — and of the policy also,

in a certain measure and in certain cases at least, of permitting this traffic to continue. »

This, sir, is the argument with which we furnish the other nations of Europe, if we again refuse to put an end to the slave-trade. Instead, therefore, of imagining, that by choosing to presume on their continuing it, we shall have exempted ourselves from guilt, and have transferred the whole criminality to them; let us rather reflect that, on the very principle urged against us, we shall henceforth have to answer for their crimes, as well as our own. We have strong reason to believe that it depends upon us, whether other countries will persist in this bloody trade or not. Already we have suffered one year to pass away, and now that the question is renewed, a proposition is made for gradual, with the view of preventing immediate abolition. I know the difficulty that exists in attempting to reform long established abuses; and I know the danger arising from the argument in favour of delay, in the case of evils which nevertheless are thought too enormous to be borne, when considered as perpetual. But by proposing some other period than the present, by prescribing some condition, by waiting for some contingency, or by refusing to proceed till a thousand favourable circumstances unite together; perhaps until we obtain the general concurrence of Europe (a concurrence which I believe never yet took place at the commencement of any one improvement in policy or in morals); year after year escapes, and the most enormous evils go unredressed. We see this abundantly exemplified, not only in public, but in private life. Similar observations have been applied to the case of personal reformation. If you go into the street, it is a chance but the first person who crosses you is one, « *Vivendi recte qui prorogat horam.* » We may wait; we may delay to cross the stream before us, till it has run down; but we shall

wait for ever, for the river will still flow on, without being exhausted. We shall be no nearer the object which we profess to have in view, so long as the step, which alone can bring us to it, is not taken. Until the actual, the only remedy is applied, we ought neither to flatter ourselves that we have as yet thoroughly laid to heart the evil we affect to deplore; nor that there is as yet any reasonable assurance of its being brought to an actual termination.

It has also been occasionally urged, that there is something in the disposition and nature of the Africans themselves, which renders all prospect of civilization on that continent extremely unpromising. « It has been known, » says Mr Frazer, in his evidence, « that a boy has been put to death, who was refused to be purchased as a slave. » This single story was deemed by that gentleman a sufficient proof of the barbarity of the Africans, and of the inutility of abolishing the slave-trade. My honourable friend, however, has told you, that this boy had previously run away from his master three several times; that the master had to pay his value, according to the custom of his country, every time he was brought back; and that, partly from anger at the boy for running away so frequently, and partly to prevent a still further repetition of the same expense, he determined to put him to death. Such was the explanation of the story given in the cross-examination. This, sir, is the signal instance that has been dwelt upon of African barbarity. — This African, we admit, was *unenlightened*, and altogether barbarous: but let us now ask what would a *civilized* and *enlightened West-Indian*, or a body of West-Indians, have done in any case of a parallel nature? I will quote you, sir, a law passed in the West Indies, in the year 1722, which, in turning over the book, I happened just now to cast my eye upon; by which law, this very same crime of running away, is, by the le-

gislature of the island, -- by the grave and deliberate sentence of that enlightened legislature, punished with death: and this, not in the case only of the third offence but even in the very first instance. It is enacted, « that if any negro or other slave shall withdraw himself from his master, for the term of six months; or any slave that was absent shall not return within that time, it shall be adjudged felony, and every such person shall suffer death. There is also another West-Indian law by which every negro's hand his armed against his fellow negroes, by his being authorised to kill a runaway slave, and even having a reward held out to him for doing so. Let the house now contrast the two cases. Let them ask themselves which of the two exhibits the greather barbarity? Let them reflect, with a little candour and liberality, whether on the ground of any of those facts, and loose insinuations as to the sacrifices to be met with in the evidence, they can possibly reconcile to themselves the excluding of Africa from all means of civilization? whether the can possibly vote for the continuance of the slave-trade upon the principle, that the Africans have shown themselves to be a race of *incorrigible barbarians?*

I hope, therefore, we shall hear no more of the moral impossibility of civilizing the Africans, nor have our understandings and consciences again insulted, by being called upon to sanction the slave-trade, until other nations shall have set the example of abolishing it. While we have been deliberating upon the subject, one nation, not ordinarily taking the lead in politics, nor by any means remarkable for the boldness of its councils, has determined on a gradual abolition; a determination indeed, which, since it permits for a time the existence of the slave-trade, would be an unfortunate pattern for our imitation. France, it is said, will take up the trade, if we relinquish it. What? It is supposed that in the present situation of St-Domingo,

of an island which used to take three-fourths of all the slaves required by the colonies of France, she, of all countries, will think of taking it up? What countries remain? The Portuguese, the Dutch, and the Spaniards. Of those countries let me declare it as my opinion, that if they see us renounce the trade, after full deliberation, they will not be disposed, even on principles of policy, to rush further into it. But I say more; How are they to furnish the capital necessary for carrying it on? If there is any aggravation of our guilt, in this wretched business, greater than another, it is that we have stooped to be the carriers of these miserable beings from Africa to the West Indies for all the other powers of Europe. And now, sir, if we retire from the trade altogether, I ask, where is that fund which is to be raised at once by other nations, equal to the purchase of 30 or 40,000 slaves? A fund which, if we rate them at 40*l.* or 50*l.* each, cannot make a capital of less than a million and a half, or two millions of money. From what branch of their commerce is it that these European nations will draw together a fund to feed this monster? — to keep alive this detestable commerce? And even if they should make the attempt, will not that immense chasm, which must instantly be created in the other parts of their trade, from which this vast capital must be withdrawn in order to supply the slave-trade, be filled up by yourselves? — Will not these branches of commerce which they must leave, and from which they must withdraw their industry and their capitals, in order to apply them to the slave trade, be then taken up by Bristish merchants? — Will you not even in this case find your capital flow into these deserted channels? —Will not your capital be turned from the slave-trade to that natural and innocent commerce from which they must withdraw their capitals, in proportion as

they take up the traffic in the flesh and blood of their fellow-creatures?

The committee sees, I trust, how little ground of objection to our proposition there is in this part of our adversaries' argument.

Having now detained the house so long, all that I will further add, shall be on that important subject, the civilization of Africa, which I have already shown that I consider as the leading feature in this question. Grieved am I to think that there should be a single person in this country, much more that there should be a single member in the British parliament, who can look on the present dark, uncultivated, and uncivilized state of that continent, as a ground for continuing the slave-trade, — as a ground not only for refusing to attempt the improvement of Africa, but even for hindering and intercepting every ray of light which might otherwise break in upon her, — as a ground for refusing to her the common chance and the common means with which other nations have been blessed, of emerging from their native barbarism.

Here, as in every other branch of this extensive question, the argument of our adversaries pleads against them; for, surely, sir, the present deplorable state of Africa, especially when we reflect that her chief calamities are to be ascribed to us, calls for our generous aid, rather than justifies any despair on our part of her recovery, and still less any further repetition of our injuries.

I will not much longer fatigue the attention of the house; but this point has impressed itself so deeply on my mind, that I must trouble the committee with a few additional observations. Are we justified, I ask, on any one ground of theory, or by any one instance to be found in the history of the world, from its very beginning to this day, in for-

ming the supposition which I am now combating? Are we justified in supposing that the particular pratice which we encourage in Africa, of men's selling each other for slaves, is any symptom of a barbarism that is incurable? Are we justified in supposing that even the pratice of offering up human sacrifices proves a total incapacity for civilization? I believe it will be found, and perhaps much more generally than is supposed, that both the trade in slaves, and the still more savage custom of offering human sacrifices, obtained in former periods throughout many of those nations which now, by the blessings of Providence, and by a long progression of improvements, are advanced the farthest in civilization. I believe, sir, that, if we will reflect an instant, we shall find that this observation comes directly home to our own selves; and that, on the same ground on which we are now disposed to proscribe Africa for ever from all possibility of improvement, we ourselves might, in like manner, have been proscribed and for ever shut out from all the blessings which we now enjoy.

There was a time, sir, which it may be fit sometimes to revive in the remembrance of our countrymen, when even human sacrifices are said to have been offered in this island. But I would peculiarly observe on this day, for it is a case precisely in point, that the very pratice of the slave-trade once prevailed among us. Slaves, as we may read in Henry's History of Great Britain, were formerly an established article of our exports. « Great numbers, » he says, « were exported like cattle, from the British coast, and were to be seen exposed for sale in the Roman market. » It does not distinctly appear by what means they were procured; but there was unquestionably no small ressemblance, in this particular point, between the case of our ancestors and that of the present wretched natives of Africa— for the historian tells you that « adultery, witchcraft, and

debt, were probably some of the chief sources of supplying the Roman market with British slaves — that prisoners taken in war were added to the number — and that there might be among them some unfortunate gamesters, who, after having lost all their goods, at length staked themselves, their wives, and their children. » Every one of these sources of slavery has been stated, and almost precisely in the same terms, to be at this hour a source of slavery in Africa. And these circumstances, sir, with a solitary instance or two of human sacrifices, furnish the alleged proofs, that Africa labours under a natural incapacity for civilization; that it is enthusiam and fanaticism to think that she can ever enjoy the hnowldge and the morals of Europe; that Providence never intended her to rise above a state of barbarism; that Providence has irrevocably doomed her to be only a nursery for slaves for us free and civilized Europeans. Allow of this principle, as applied to Africa, and I should be glad to know why it might not also have been applied to ancient and uncivilized Britain. Why might not some Roman senator, reasoning on the principles of some honourable gentlemen, and pointing to *British barbarians*, have predicted with equal boldness, *There* is a people that will never rise to civilization — *there* is a people destined never to be free — a people without the understanding necessary for the attainment of useful arts; depressed by the hand of nature below the level of the human species; and created to form a supply of slaves for the rest of world. » Might not this have been said, according to the principles which we now hear stated, in all respects as fairly and as truly of Britain herself, at that period of her history, as it can now be said by us of the inhabitants of Africa?

We, sir, have long since emerged from barbarism — we have almost forgotten that we were once barbarians — we are now raised to a situation which exhibits a striking

contrast to every circumstance by which a Roman might have characterized us, and by which we now characterize Africa. There is indeed one thing wanting to complete the contrast, and to clear us altogether from the imputation of acting even to this hour as barbarians; for we continue to this hour a barbarous traffic in slaves; we continue it even yet in spite of all our great and undeniable pretensions to civilization. We were once as obscure among the nations of the earth, as savage in our manners, as debased in our morals, as degraded in our understandings, ase these unhappy Africans are as present. But in the lapse of a long series of years, by a progression slow, and for a time almost imperceptible, we have become rich in a variety of acquirements, favoured above measure in the gifts of Providence, unrivalled in commerce, pre-eminent in arts, foremost in the pursuits of philosophy and science, and established in all the blessings of civil society: We are in the possession of peace, of happiness, and of liberty; we are under the guidance of a mild and beneficent religion; and we are protected by impartial laws, and the purest administration of justice: we are living under a system of government, which our own happy experience leads us to pronounce the best and wisest which has ever yet been framed; a system which has become the admiration of the world. From all these blessings we must for ever have been shut out, had there been any truth in those principles which some gentlemen have not hesitated lay down as applicable to the ease of Africa. Had those principles been true, we ourselves had languished to this hour in that miserable state of ignorance, brutality, and degradation, in which history proves our ancestors to have been immersed. Had other nations adopted these principles in their conduct towards us; had other nations applied to Great Briatin the reasoning which some of the senators of this very island now

apply to Africa ; ages might have passed without our emerging from barbarism; and we, who are enjoying the blessings of British civilization, of British laws, and British liberty, might at this hour have been little superior, either in morals, in knowledge, or refinement, to the rude inhabitants of the coast of Guinea.

If then we feel that this perpetual confinement in the fetters of brutal ignorance would have been the greatest calamity which could have befallen us; if we view with gratitude and exultation the contrast between the peculiar blessings we enjoy, and the wretchedness of the ancient inhabitants of Britain; if we shudder to think of the misery which would still have overwhelmed us, had Great Britain continued to the present times to be the mart for slaves to the more civilized nations of the world, through some cruel policy of theirs, God forbid that we should any longer subject Africa to the same dreadful scourge, and preclude the light of knowledge, which has reached every other quarter of the globe, from having access to her coasts!

I trust we shall no longer continue this commerce, to the destruction of every improvement on that wide continent; and shall not consider ourselves as conferring too great a boon, in restoring its inhabitants to the rank of human beings. I trust we shall not think ourselves too liberal, if, by abolishing the slave-trade, we give them the same common chance of civilization vith other parts of the world, and that we shall now allow to Africa the opportunity — the hope — the prospect of attaining the same blessings which we ourselves, through the favourable dispensation of Divine Providence, have been permitted, at a much more early period, to enjoy. If we listen to the voice of reason and duty, and pursue this night the line of conduct which they prescribe, some of us may live to see a reverse of that picture, from which we now turn our eyes

with shame and regret. We may live to behold the native of Africa engaged in the calm occupations of industry, in the pursuits of a just and legitimate commerce. We may behold the beams of science and philosophy breaking in upon their land, which, at some happy period in still later times, may blaze with full lustre; and joining their influence to that of pure religion, may illuminate and invigorate the most distant extremities of that immense continent. Then may we hope that even Africa, though last of all the quarters of the globe, shall enjoy at length, in the evening of her days, those blessings which have descended so plentifully upon us in a much earlier period of the world. Then also will Europe, participating in her improvement and prosperity, receive an ample recompense for the tardy kindness (if kindness it can be called) of no longer hindering that continent from extricating herself out of the darkness which, in other more fortunate regions, has been so much more speedily dispelled.

—Nos primus equis oriens afflavit anhelis;
Illic sera rubens accendit lumina Vesper.

Then, sir, may be applied to Africa those words, originally used indeed with a different view:

His demum exactis——————————
Devenere locos lætos, et amœna vireta
Fortunatorum nemorum, sedesque beatas:
Largior hic campos Æther, et lumine vestit
Purpureo.

It is in this view, sir,—it is in atonement for our long and cruel injustice towards Africa, that the measure proposed by my honourable friend most forcibly recommends

itself to my mind. The great and happy change to be expected in the state of her inhabitants, is, of all the various and important benefits of the abolition in my estimation, incomparably the most extensive and important.

I shall vote, sir, against the adjournment; and I shall also oppose to the utmost every proposition, which in any way may tend either to prevent, or even to postpone for an hour the total abolition of the slave-trade: a measure which, on all the various grounds which I have stated, we are bound by the most pressing and indispensable duty to adopt.

Characters.

PLAINWAY.
FAINWOULD.
JEREMY DIDDLER.
SAM.
RICHARD.
WAITER.
JOHN (Servant to Plainway).
MESSENGER.
PEGGY.
MISS LAURELIA DURABLE.

SCENE—A Country Town.

COSTUME.

Plainway. — Dark brown old man's suit — white stockings — gouty shoe.

Fainwould. — Dark green coat — white waistcoat — nankeen trousers — boots.

Jeremy Diddler. — An old dark blue coat, torn at the elbows, and buttoned close to the throat—buff waistcoat—orange worsted pantaloons — small nankeen gaiters — shoes — old low-crowned hat.

Sam.—Drab countryman's coat — buff breeches — gray worsted stockings — countryman's hat.

Richard. — Gray livery coat — buff waistcoat — breeches — brown gaiters.

Waiter. — Blue coat — trousers — white waistcoat.

John. — Dark brown livery — blue stockings.

Peggy. — White muslin dress — pink sash — black shoes

Miss Durable. — Dark red muslin dress — light blue sash — cap with pink ribbon and rose.

RAISING THE WIND.

ACT I.

SCENE I. — *The Public Room in an Inn. — With two tables and three chairs. — Bell rings.*

Sam. [*Without.*] Coming, I'm coming!

Enter Waiter, and SAM, *meeting.*

Waiter. Well, Sam, there's a little difference between this and hay-making, eh?

Sam. Yes; but I get on pretty decent, don't I? only you see, when two or three people call at once, I'm apt to get flurried, — and then I can't help listening to the droll things the young chaps say to one another at dinner — and then I don't exactly hear what they say to me, you see. Sometimes, too, I fall a laughing wi'em, and that they don't like, you understand—

Waiter. Well, well, you'll soon get the better of all that. [*A laugh without.*

Sam. What's all that about?

Waiter. [*Looking out.*] Oh, it's Mr. Diddler, trying to joke himself into credit at the bar. But it won't do, they know him too well. — By the by, Sam, mind you never trust that fellow.

Sam. What, him with the spy-glass?

Waiter. Yes, that impudent short-sighted fellow.

Sam. Why, what for not?

Waiter. Why, because he'll never pay you. — The fellow lives by spunging — gets into people's houses by his songs and his bon-mots.

Sam. Bon-mots! what be they?

Waiter. Why, saying smart witty things. At some of the squire's tables, he's as constant a guest as the parson or the apothecary.

Sam. Come, that's an odd line to go into, however.

Waiter. Then he borrows money of every body he meets.

Sam. Nay, but will any body lend it him?

Waiter. Why he asks for so little at a time, that people are ashamed to refuse him; and then he generally asks for an odd sum, to give it the appearance of immediate necessity.

Sam. Dramma, he must be a droll chap, however.

Waiter. Here he comes; mind you take care of him. [*Exit.*

Sam. Never you fear that, mun. I wasn't born two hundred miles north of Lunnun, to be done by Mr. Diddler, I know.

Enter DIDDLER.

Did. Tol lol de riddle lol: — Eh! [*Looking through a glass at Sam.*] The new waiter, a very clod, by my hopes! an untutor'd clod. — My clamorous bowels, be of good cheer. — Young man, how d'ye do? Step this way, will you? —

A novice, I perceive. — And how d'ye like your new line of life?

Sam. Why, very well, thank ye. How do you like your old one?

Did. [*Aside.*] Disastrous accents! a Yorkshireman! [*To him.*] What is your name, my fine fellow?

Sam. Sam. — You needn't tell me yours, I know you, my—fine fellow.

Did. [*Aside.*] Oh Fame! Fame! you incorrigible gossip! — but *nil desperandum* — at him again. [*To him.*] A prepossessing physiognomy, open and ruddy, importing health and liberality. Excuse my glass, I'm short-sighted. You have the advantage of me in that respect.

Sam. Yes, I can see as far as most folks.

Did. [*Turning away.*] Well, I'll thank ye to — O Sam, you haven't got such a thing as tenpence about you, have you?

Sam. Yes. [*They look at each other–Diddler expecting to receive it.*] And I mean to keep it about me, you see.

Did. Oh — ay — certainly. I only ask'd for information.

Sam. Hark! there's the stage-coach com'd in. I must go and wait upon the passengers. — You'd better ax some of them — mayhap, they mun gie you a little better information.

Did. Stop! Hark-ye, Sam! you can get me some breakfast, first. I'm devilish sharp set, Sam; you see I come a long walk from over the hills, and —

Sam. Ay; and you see I come fra —Yorkshire.

Did. You do; your unsophisticated tongue declares it. Superior to vulgar prejudices, I honour you for it, for I'm sure you'll bring me my breakfast as soon as any other countryman.

Sam. Ay; well, what will you have?

Did. Any thing! — tea, coffee, an egg, and so forth.

Sam. Well, now, one of us, you understand, in this transaction, mun have credit for a little while. That is, either I mun trust your for t'money, or you mun trust me for t'breakfast.—Now, as you're above vulgar preju-prejudizes, and seem to be vastly taken wi'me, and, as I am not so conceited as to be above 'em, and a'n't at all taken wi' you, you'd better give me the money, you see, and trust me for t'breakfast—he! he! he!

Did. What d'ye mean by that, Sam?

Sam. Or, mayhap, you'll say me a bon-mot.

Did. Sir, you're getting impertinent.

Sam. Oh! what—you don't like they terms.—Why, then, as you sometimes sing for your dinner, now you may whistle for your breakfast, you see; he! he! he! [*Exit.*

Did. This it is to carry on trade without a capital. Once I paid my way, and in a pretty high road I travelled; but thou art now, Jerry Diddler, little better than a vagabond. Fie on thee! Awake thee, rouse thy spirit! honourably earn thy breakfast and thy dinners, too.—But how? my present trade is the only one that requires no apprenticeship. How unlucky, that the rich and pretty Miss Plainway, whose heart I won at Bath, should take so sudden a departure, that I should lose her adress, and call myself a foolish romantic name, that will prevent her letters from reaching me! A rich wife would pay my debts, and heal my wounded pride. But the degenerate state of my wardrobe is confoundedly against me. There's a warm old rogue, they say, with a pretty daughter, lately come to his house at the foot of the hill.—I've a great mind—it's d——d impudent, but, if I hadn't surmounted my delicacy, I must have starved long ago.

Enter Waiter, in haste.

George, what's the name of the new family at the foot of the hill?

Waiter. I don't know: I can't attend to you now. [*Exit.*

Did. There again. Oh! I musn't bear this any longer— I must make a plunge.—No matter for the name. Gad! perhaps it may be more imposing not to know it. I'll go and scribble her a passionate billet immediately; — that is, if they'll trust me with pen and ink. [*Exit.*

Enter FAINWOULD *and* RICHARD; SAM *shows them in., and exit.*

Fain. Bring breakfast directly.—Well, Richard, I think I shall awe them into a little respect here, though they're apt to grin at me in London.

Rieh. That you will, I dave say, sir.

Pain. Respect, Richard, is all I want. My father's money has made me a gentleman, and you never see any familiar jesting with your true gentlemen, I'm sure.

Rich. Very true, sir. And so, sir, you've come here to marry this Miss Plainway, without ever having seen her.

Fain. Yes; but my father and hers are very old friends. They were school-fellows. They've lived at a distance from one another ever since, for Plainway always hated London. But my father has often visited him, and, about a month ago, at Bristol, they made up this match. I didn't object to it, for my father says she is a very pretty girl; aud, besides, the girls in London don't treat me with proper respect, by any means.

Rich. At Bristol? — then they're new inhabitants here. Well, sir, you must muster all your gallantry.

Fain. I will, Dick; but I'm not successful that way — I always do some stupid thing or other when I want to be attentive. The other night, in a large assembly, I picked up the tail of a lady's gown, and gave it to her for her pocket-handkerchief. — Lord, how the people did laugh!

Rich. It was an awkward mistake, to be sure, sir.

Fain. Well, now for a little refreshment, and then for Miss Plainway. Go, and look after the luggage, Richard.

[*Sits down. — Exit Richard.*

Enter DIDDLER, *with a letter in his hand.*

Did. Here it is, brief, but impressive. If she has but the romantic imagination of my Peggy, the direction alone must win her. [*Reads*] « *To the Beautiful Maid at the foot of the hill.* » The words are so delicate, the arrangement so poetical, and the tout-ensemble reads with such a languishing cadence, that a blue-stocking garden-wench must feel it! « To the Beautiful Maid at the foot of the hill. » She can't resist it!

Fain. I am very hungry, I wish they would bring my breakfast. [*Sitting near the table.*

Did. Breakfast! delightful sound! — Oh! bless your unsuspicious face, we'll breakfast together. [*Diddler goes to the table, takes up a newspaper, and sits down*] Sir, your most obedient. From London, sir, I presume?

Fain. At your service, sir.

Did. Pleasant travelling, sir.

Fain. Middling, sir.

Did. Any news in town, when you came away?

Fain. Not a word, sir. [*Aside.*] Come, this is polite and respectful.

Did. Pray, sir, what's your opinion of affairs in general?

Fain. Sir? — why really, sir, -- [*Aside*] Nobody would ask my opinion in town, now.

Did. No politician, perhaps? You talked of breakfast, sir; — I was just thinking of the same thing — shall be proud of your company. [*Rises.*

Fain. [*Rises.*] You're very obliging, sir, but really I'm in such haste --

Did. Don't mention it. Company is every thing to me. I'm that sort of man, that I really couldn't dispense with you.

Fain. Sir, since you insist upon it -- waiter!

Sam [*Without.*] Coming, sir.

Fain. Bless me, they're very inattentive here — they never bring you what you call for. [*Sits again.*

Did. No — they very often serve me so.

[*Sits in chair.*

Enter SAM.

Fain. Let that breakfast be for two.

Did. Yes, this gentleman and I are going to breakfast together.

Sam. [*To Fainwould.*] You order it, do you, sir?

Fain. Yes, to be sure; didn't you hear me?

Sam. [*Chuckling.*] Yes, I heard you.

Fain. Then bring it immediately.

Sam. Yes. [*Still chuckling.*

Fain. What d'ye mean by laughing, you scoundrel?

Did. Ay, what d'ye mean by laughing, you scoundrel?

[*Drives Sam out, and follows.*

Fain. Now, that's respectful, especially to that gentleman, who seems to be so well known here; but these country waiters are always impertinent.

Enter DIDDLER *his letter in his hand.*

Did. A letter for me? desire the man to wait. That

bumpkin is the most impertinent — I declare it's enough to. — [*Advancing towards Fainwould.*] — You haven't got such a thing as half-a-crown about you, have you, sir? there's a messenger waiting, and I haven't got any change about me.

Fain. Certainly — at your service.

[*Takes out his purse and gives him money.*

Did. I'll return it to you, sir, as soon as possible. Alloa! here!

Enter Waiter.

Here's the man's money, [*Putting it into his own pocket.*] bring the breakfast immediately.

Waiter. Here it is, sir. [*Exit.*

Enter Sam, *with breakfast.*

Did. There we are, sir. Now, no ceremony, I beg, for I'm rather in a hurry myself. [*Exit Sam, chuckling. Diddler pours out coffee for himself.*] Help yourself, and then you'll have it to your liking. When you've done with that loaf, sir, I'll thank you for it. [*Takes it out of his hand.*] Thank ye, sir. Breatfast, sir, is a very wholesome meal.

[*Eating fast.*

Fain. It is, sir; I always eat a good one.

Did. So do I, sir, [*Aside*] when I can get it.

Fain. I am an early riser, too; and, in town, the servants are so lazy that I am often obliged to wait a long while before I can get any.

Did. That's exactly my case in the country.

Fain. And it's very tantalizing, when one's hungry, to be served so.

Did. Very, sir; — I'll trouble you once more.

[*Snatches the bread out of his hand again.*

Fain. [*Aside.*] This can't be meant for disrespect, but it's very like it.

Did. Are you looking for this, sir? you can call for more if you want it. [*Returns a very small bit.*] Here, waiter! [*Waiter answers without.*] Some more bread for this gentleman. You eat nothing at all, sir.

Fain. Why, bless my soul, I can get nothing.

SAM *enters with rolls.*

Did. Very well, Sam — thank ye, Sam — but don't giggle, Sam; curse you, don't laugh.

[*Following him out.*

Sam. Ecod! you're in luck, Mr. Diddler. [*Exit.*

Did. [*Again taking his letter out of his pocket.*] What, another letter by the coach. Might I trouble you again? You haven't got such a thing as tenpence about you, have you? I live close by, sir; I'll send it to you all in the moment I go home. Be glad to see you any time you'll look in, sir.

Fain. You do me honour, sir --- I haven't any halfpence; but there's my servant, you can desire him to give it you.

Did. You're very obliging. [*Puts the rolls Sam brought, unobserved, into his hat.*] I'm extremely sorry to give you so much trouble. I will take that liberty. [*Aside.*] Come, I've raised the wind for today, however, ha! ha! ha! ha! [*Exit.*

Fain. That must be a man of some breeding—by his ease and his impudence.

Enter SAM.

Who is that gentleman, waiter?

Sam. Gentleman!

Fain. Yes; by his using an inn, I suppose he lives upon his means — don't he?

Sam. Yes; but they're the oddest sort of means you ever heard of in your life. What, don't you know him?

Fain. No.

Sam. Well, I thought so.

Fain. He invited me to breakfast with him.

Sam. Ay; well, that was handsome enough.

Fain. I thought so myself.

Sam. But it isn't quite so handsome to leave you to pay for it.

Fain. Leave me to pay for it!

Sam. [*Looking out.*]Yes, I see he's off there.

Fain. Poh! he's only gone to pay for a letter.

Sam. A letter! bless you, there's no letter comes here for him.

Fain. Why, he's had two this morning; I lent him the money to pay for 'em.

Sam. No; did you, though?

Fain. Yes; he hadn't any change about him.

Sam. [*Laughing.*] Dam' if that an't the softest trick I ever knowed. — You come fra' Lunnum, don't you, sir?

Fain. Who, you giggling blockhead, what d'ye mean?

Sam. Why, he's had no letters, I tell you, but one he has just been writing here himself.

Fain. An impudent rascal.

Sam. Well, sir, we'll put t'breakfast all to your bill, you understand, as you ordered it.

Fain. Psha! don't tease me about the breakfast.

Sam. Upon my soul, the flattest trick I ever heard of.

[*Exit, laughing.*

Fain. Well, this is the most disrespectful treatment.

Enter RICHARD, *meeting him.*

Rich. I lent that gentleman the tenpence, sir.
Fain. Confound the gentleman and you too.
[*Exit, driving off Richard.*

SCENE II. — *The Outside of Plainway's House.*

Enter PLAINWAY, PEGGY, *and* MISS DURABLE.

Miss. D. Dear cousin, how soon you hurry us home!

Plain. Cousin, you grow worse and worse. You'd be gaping after the men from morning till night.

Miss. D. Mr. Plainway, I tell you again, I'll not bear your sneers; though I won't blush to own, as I've often told you, that I think the society of accomplished men as innocent as it is pleasing.

Plain. Innocent enough with you it must be. But there's no occasion to stare accomplished men full in the face as they pass you, or to sit whole hours at a window to gape at them, unless it is to talk to them in your famous language of the eyes; and that I'm afraid few of'em understand, or else you speak very badly; for, whenever you ask 'em a question in it, they never seem to make you any answer.

Miss D. Cousin Plainway, you're a sad brute, and I'll never pay you another visit while I live.

Plain. I'm afraid, cousin, you have helped my daughter to some of her wild notions. Come, knock at the door. — [*Miss Durable knocks at door of house. — John opens it.*] Well, Peg, are you better prepared to meet your lover?

Peg. [*In a pensive tone and attitude.*] Alas! cruel fate ordains I shall never see him more.

[*The door opens--Miss Durable goes into the house.*

Plain. There — she's at her romance again. Never meet him more; why, you're going to meet him today for the first time.

Peg. You speak of the vulgar, the sordid Fainwould; I, of the all-accomplished Mortimer.

Plain. There! that Mortimer again. — Let me hear that name no more, hussy; I am your father, and will be obeyed.

Peg. No, sir; as Miss Somerville says, fathers of ignorant and grovelling minds have no right to our obedience.

Plain. Miss Somerville! and who the devil is Miss Somerville?

Peg. What, sir! have you never read the Victim of Sentiment?

Plain. D—n the victim of sentiment! — Get in, you baggage — Victim of sentiment, indeed!

[*They go into house.*

Enter DIDDLER.

Did. There she dwells. Grant, my kind stars! that she may have no lover, that she may be dying for want of one; that she may tumble about in her rosy slumbers with dreaming of some unknown swain, lovely and insinuating as Jeremy Diddler. Now, how shall I get my letter delivered?

Miss D. [*Appearing at the window.*] Well, I declare, the balmy zephyr breathes such delightful and refreshing breezes, that, in spite of my cousin's sneers, I can't help indulging in them.

Did. [*Looking up.*] There she is, by my hopes! Ye sylphs and cupids! strengthen my sight, that I may luxuriate on her

beauties. No — not a feature can I distinguish — but she's gazing on mine, and that's enough.

Miss D. What a sweet-looking young gentleman — and his eyes are directed towards me. Oh, my palpitating heart! what can he mean?

Did. You're a made man, Jerry. I'll pay off my old scores, and never borrow another six pence while I live.

Miss D. [*Sings.*] « Oh! listen, listen to the voice of love. » —

Did. Voice indifferent: — but d——n music when I've done singing for my dinners.

Enter Sam, *with a parcel.*

Eh, Same! here — be shall deliver my letter. — My dear Sam, I'm so glad to see you — I forgive your laughing at me. — Will you do me a favour?

Sam. If it won't take me long, for you see I've gotten a parcel to deliver in a great hurry. By the b, how nicely you did that chap!

Did. Hush, you rogue — Look up there — do you see that lady?

Sam. Yes, I see her. —

Did. Isn't she an angel?

Sam. Why, if she be, she's been a good while dead, I reckon; long enough, to appearance, to be t'mother of angels.

Did. Sam, you're a wag, but I don't understand your jokes. Now, if you can contrive to deliver this letter into her own hands, you shall be handsomely rewarded.

Sam. Handsomely rewarded! — Ay, well let's see; [*Takes the letter.*] «To the beauti— »

Did. Beautiful —

Sam. « Beautiful maid at the foot of the hill. » [*Looks up*

at the window.] Damma, now you're at some of your tricks. [*Aside.*] The old toad's got some money, I reckon. Well, I can but try, you know — and as to the reward, why it's neither here nor there. [*Knocks at the door — John opens it.*

Did. Thank ye, my dear fellow. Get an answer if you can, and I'll wait here for you.

[*The door opens — Sam nods and enters.*

Miss D. A letter to deliver. — Oh, dear! I'm all of a flutter. I must learn what it means.

[*Retires from the window.*

Did. Transport! she has disappeared to receive it. She's mine. Now I shall visit the country'squires upon other terms. — I'll only sing when it comes to my turn, and never tell a story or cut a joke but at my own table. Yet I'm sorry for my pretty Peggy I did love that little rogue, and I'm sure she never thinks of her Mortimer without sighing.— [*Sam opens the door, holds it open, and beckons.*] Eh, Sam! well, what answer? [*Sam advances.*

Sam. Why, first of all, she fell into a vast trepidation.

Did. Then you saw herself?

Sam. Yes', I asked to see she that were sitting at the window over the door.

Did. Well —

Sam. Well, you see, as I tell you, when she opened the letter, she fell into a vast trepidation, and fluttered and blushed, and blushed and fluttered — in short — I never see'd any person play such comical games i'my days.

Did. It was emotion, Sam.

Sam. Yes, I know it was emotion, but it was a devilish queer one. Then at last, says she, stuttering, as might be our potboy of a frosty morning, says she, tell your master, — she thought you was my master, he! he! he!

Did. My dear Sam, go on.

Sam. Well; — tell your master, says she, that his request is rather bold, but I've too much — too much confidence in my own — diss — dissension —

Did. Discretion!

Sam. Ay, I fancy you're right — in my own discretion, to be afraid of granting it. Then she turned away blushing again —

Did. Like the rose —

Sam. Like the rose, he! he! he! like a red cabbage.

Did. I'm a happy fellow.

Sam. [*Smiling.*] Why, how much did you ax her for?

Did. Only for an interview.

Sam. Oh! then you'd better go in, I an't shut the door.

Did. I fixed it for to-morrow morning: but there's nothing like striking while the iron's hot. — I will go in, find her out, and lay myself at her feet immediately. I'll reward you, Sam, depend upon it. I shall be a monied man soon and then I'll reward you. [*Sam sneers*] I will, Sam, I give you my word. [*Goes into the house.*

Sam. Come, that's kind, too, to give me what nobody else will take. [*Exit.*

SCENE III. — *A Room in Plainway's House. — Two Chairs.*

Enter DIDDLER *cautiously.*

Did. Not here. — If I could but find a closet now, I'd hide myself till she came nigh. — Luckily, here is one. — Who have we here?

[*Retires into a closet, and listens from the door.*

Enter Fainwould *and* John.

John. Walk in, sir, I'll send my master to you directly. [*Exit.*

Fain. Now let me see if I can't meet with a little more respect here.

Did. [*Approaching and examining him*] My cokney friend, by the Lord! Come in pursuit of me, perhaps!

Fain. Old Plainway will treat me becomingly, no doubt; and, as he positively determined with my father that I should have his daughter, I presume she's prepared to treat me with proper respect, too.

Did. What! Plainway and his daughter! Here's a discovery! Then, my Peggy, after all, is the beautiful maid at the foot of the hill, and the sly rogue wouldn't discover herself at the window on purpose to convict me of infidelity. How unlucky! and a rival arrived, too, just at the unfortunate crisis. [*Jonh returns.*

John. He'll be with you immediately, Mr. Fainwould. [*Crosses and exit.*

Did. Mr. Fainwould, eh! — Now, what's to be done? If I could but get rid of him, I wouldn't despair of excusing myself to Peggy.

Fain. I wonder what my father says in his letter of introduction. [*Takes a letter out of his pocket.*

Did. A letter of introduction! — Oh! oh! the first visit, then. Gad, I have it! — It's the only way; so impudence befriend me! But first, I'll lock the old gentleman out. [*Goes cautiously, and locks the door, whence the servant came out. — then advances briskly to Fainwould.*] Sir, your most obedient.

Fain. He here!

Did. So you've found me out, sir. But I've sent you the

money — three-and-four-pence, wasn't it? — Two and six and ten —

Fain. Sir, I didn't mean —

Did. No, sir, I dare say not, —merely for a visit. Well, I'm very glad to see you. Won't you take a seat?

Fain. And you live here, do you, sir?

Did. At present, sir, I do.

Fain. And is your name Plainway?

Did. No, sir, I'm Mr. Plainway's nephew. I'd introduce you to my uncle, but he's very busy at present with Sir Robert Rental, settling preliminaries for his marriage with my cousin.

Fain. Sir Robert Rental's marriage with Miss Plainway!

Did. Oh, you've heard a different report on that subject, perhaps. Now, thereby hangs a very diverting tale. If you're not in a hurry, sit down, and I'll make you laugh about it.

[*Diddler goes up and gets a chair, which he brings forward, and in placing it, he strikes it on Fainwould's foot.*

Fain. [*Aside.*] This is all very odd, upon my soul.

[*They sit down, he having brought down chair.*

Did. You see, my uncle did agree with an old fellow of the name of Fainwould, a Londonner, to marry my cousin to his son, and expects him down every day for the purpose; but, a little while ago, Sir Robert Rental, a baronet, with a thumping estate, fell in love with her, and she fell in love with him. So my uncle altered his mind, as it was very natural he should, you know, and agreed to this new match.—And, as he never saw the young cockney, and has since heard that he's quite a vulgar, conceited, foolish fellow, he hasn't thought it worth his while to send him any notice of the affair. So, if he should come down, you know, we shall have a d——d good laugh at is di-

sappointment. [*Fainwould drops his letter, which Diddler picks up unseen.*] Ha! ha! ha! a very capital go, isn't it?

Fain. Ha! ha! ha! a very capital go, indeed. [*Aside.*] Here's disrespect. [*To him.*] But if the cockney shouldn't be disposed to think of the affair quite so merrily as you?

Did. O the puppy! if he's refractory, I'll pull his nose.

Fain. [*Aside*] Here's an impudent scoundrel. [*Rises.*] Well, I shall cheat 'em of their laugh by this meeting, howewer.

Did. [*Aside.*] A shy cock, I see.

Fain. O, you'll pull his nose, will you?

Did. If he's troublesome, I shall certainly have that pleasure. Nothing I enjoy more than pulling noses.

Fain. [*Rising.*] Sir? I wish you a good morning. Perhaps, sir, you may — [*A knocking at the door Diddler locked.*

Did [*Aside.*] Just in time, by Jupiter! [*Aloud.*] Be quiet there. D—n that mastiff! Sir, I'm sorry you're going so soon. [*Knocking again.*] Be quiet, I say. Well, I wish you a good morning, sir! Then, you won't stay and take a bit of dinner?

Fain. Perhaps; sir, I say, you may hear from me again.

Did. Sir, I shall be extremely happy, I'm sure. [*Exit Fainwould.*]Bravo, Jeremy! admirably hit off. [*Knocking repeated.* Now for the old gentleman. [*Opens the door.*

Enter PLAINWAY.

Plain. My dear Mr. Fainwould, I'm extremely happy to see you. I beg pardon for keeping you so long.—Why, who the deuce could lock that door?

Did. He! he! he! It was I, sir.

Plain. You! why what —

Did. A bit of humour, to show you I determined to make free, and consider myself at home.

Plain. [*Aside.*] A bit of humour! why, you must be an inveterate humorist indeed, to begin so soon. [*To him.*] Well, come, that's merry and hearty.

Did. Yes, you'll find I've all that about me.

Plain. Well, and how's my old friend, and all the rest of the family?

Did. Wonderfully well, my old Buck.—But here, here you have it all in black and white. [*Gives the letter.*

Plain. So, an introduction.

Did. [*Aside.*] It's rather unlucky I don't know a little more of my family [*Struts familiarly about.*

Plain. [*Reads.*] "*This will at length introduce to you your son-in-law. I hope he will prove agreeable, both to you and your daughter. His late military habits I think have much improved his appearance, and perhaps you will already discern something of the officer about him..*" Something of the officer — [*Looking at him.*] dam'me, it must be a sheriff's officer, then. "*Treat him delicately, and, above all, avoid raillery with him.*" So, then, I suppose though he can give a joke, he can't take one.—"*It is apt to make him unhappy, as he always thinks it levelled at that stiffness in his manners, arising from his extreme timidity and bashfulness! Assure Peggy of the cordial affection of her intended father, and your faithful friend,* FRAS. FAINWOULD."
A very pretty introduction, truly.

Did. But where is my charming Peggy? I say — couldn't I have a little private conversation to begin with?

Plain. Why, I must introduce you, you know — I desired her to follow me — Oh! here she comes.

Did. [*Aside.*] Now, if she should fall in a passion and discover me.

Enter PEGGY.

Plain. My dear, this is Mr. Fainwould.

Did. madam, your most devoted.

[*She screams — he supports her.*

Peg. [*In a low tone.*] Mortimer!

Did. [*Aside to her.*] Hush! — Don't be astonished — you see what I'm at — keep it up.

Plain. What ails the girl? Oh, I see, she's at her romance again. — Mr. Fainwould, try if you can't bring her about, while I go and fetch my cousin Laury to you. [*Exit.*

Did. No fear, sir; she is coming about. My dear Peggy! after an age of fruitless search, do I again hold you in these arms?

Peg. Cruel man! how could you torment me with so long an absence and so long a silence? I've written to you a thousand times.

Did. A thousand unlucky accidents have prevented my receiving your letters, and your address I most fatally lost not an hour after you gave it to me.

Peg. And how did you find it out at last?

Did. By an accidental rencontre with my rival. I've hummed him famously, frightened him away from the house, contrived to get his letter of recommendation, and presented myself in his stead.

Peg. It is enough to know that you are again mine; and now we'll never part.

Did. Never, if I can help it, I assure you.

Peg. Lord, Mortimer, what a change there is in your dress!

Did. Eh! yes — I've dressed so on purpose — rather in the extreme, perhaps — but I thought it would look my vulgar rival better.

Peg. Well thought of; — so it will. Here's my father coming back. I'd better seem a little distant, you know.

Did. You're right.

Enter Plainway,... *Diddler not seeming to notice him.*

Do, my dear lady, be merciful. But perhaps it is in mercy that you thus avert from me the killing lustre of those piercing eyes.

Plain. [*Aside.*] Well done, timidity. [*To him.*] Bravo! Mr. Fainwould, you'll not be long an unsuccessful wooer, I see. Well, my cousin's coming to see you the moment she's a little composed. Why, Peg, I fancy the old fool has been gaping out at window to some purpose at last. I verily believe somebody, either in jest or in earnest, has really been writing her a billet-doux, for I caught her quite in a fuster reading a letter, and the moment she saw me, she grappled is up, and her cheeks turned as red as her nose.

Did. [*Much disconcerted, aside.*] Oh Lord! here's the riddle unfolded. Curse my blind eyes! what a scrape they've brought me into! A fusty old maid, I suppose. What the devil shall I do? I must humour the blunder, or she'll discover me.

Plain. Here she comes.

Did. [*Aside.*] Oh Lord! Oh Lord!

Enter Miss Durable.

Plain. Mr. Fainwould, Miss Durable. — Miss Durable, Mr. Fainwonld.

[*Miss Durable screams, and seems much agitated.*

Did. [*Advancing to her.*] My dear lady, what's the matter? [*Aside to her.*] Don't be astonished. You see what I'm at — keep it up.

[*Continues whispering to her.*

Plain. Why, what the devil! This fellow frightens my whole family. It must be his officer-like appearance, I suppose.

Peg. [*Aside.*] Well, I declare Laurelia means to fall in love with him, and supplant me.

Miss D. [*Aside to Diddler.*] Oh! you're a bold aventurous man.

Did. [*To her.*] Yes, I'm a very bold adventurous man, but love, madam —

Miss D. Hush!

Plain. Why, Fainwould, you seem to make some impression upon the ladies.

Did. Not a very favourable one, it would seem, sir.

Miss D. I beg Mr. Fainwould's pardon, I'm sure. It was merely a slight indisposition that seized me.

Plain. Oh! a slight indisposition, was it?

Peg. [*Aside.*] Yes, I see she's throwing out her lures.

Did. Will you allow me, madam, to lead you to the air? Miss Durable, here's the other arm at your service.

Miss D. [*Taking it.*] Dear sir, you're extremely obliging.

Did. Don't say so, madam; the obligation is mine. [*Nodding.*] Plainway, you see what a way I'm in. [*Exeunt Diddler, Peggy, and Miss Durable.*

Plain. Bashfulness! — Dam'me! if ever I saw such an impudent dog. [*Exit.*

END OF ACT I.

ACT II.

SCENE I. — *The Inn.*

Enter FAINWOULD *and* RICHARD.

Fain. In short, I never met with such disrespectful treatment since I was born: — and so the rascal's name is Diddler, is it?

Rich. So I heard the waiters call him.

Fain. As to the disappointment, Richard, it's a very fortunate one for me; for it must be a scrubby family, indeed, when one of its branches is forced to have recourse to such low practices. But, to be treated with such contempt! why, am I to be laughed at every where?

Rich. If I was you, sir, I'd put that question where it's fit it should be answered.

Fain. And so I will, Richard.—If I don't go back and kick up such a bobbery—I warrant I'll— Why, he called me a vulgar, conceited, foolish, cockney.

Rich. No, sure?

Fain. Yes, but he did—and what a fool my father must have been, not to see through such a set—a low-bred rascal with his three and four-pence. But if I don't—I'll take your advice, Richard: I'll hire a postchaise directly, drive to the house, expose that Mr. Diddler, blow up all the rest of the family, Sir Bobert Rental included, and then set off for London, and turn my back upon 'em for ever. [*Exeunt.*

Enter Sam, *with a letter, followed by* Messenger.

Sam. Why, but what for do you bring it here?

Mess. Why, because it says, to be delivered with all possible speed. I know he comes here sometimes, and most likely won't be at home till night.

Sam. Well, if I see him, I'll gi't to him. Most likely he'll be here by and by.

Mess. Then I'll leave it. [*Exit.*

Sam. Mr. Jeremia Diddler.—Dang it, what a fine seal! and I'll be shot if it don't feel like a banknote. To be delivered wi' all possible speed, too—I shouldn't wonder, now, if it brought him some good luck. Ha, ha, ha! wi' all my heart.—He's a d—d droll dog, and I like him vastly. [*Exit.*

SCENE II. — *A Room in Plainway's House. — Four chairs. — Wine, with glasses and desert, on a table.*—PLAINWAY, DIDDLER, PEGGY, *and* MISS DURABLE, *discovered at table.*

Plain. Bravo, bravo! ha, ha, ha! [*They laugh.*

Miss. D. Upon my word, Mr. Fainwould, you sing delightfully; you surely have had some practice?

Did. A little, madam.

Miss D. Well, I think it must be a very desirable accomplishment, if it were only for your own entertainment.

Did. It is in that respect, madam, that I have hitherto found it most particularly desirable.

Miss D. But surely the pleasure of pleasing your hearers—

Did. I now find to be the highest gratification it can bestow, except that of giving me a claim to a return in kind from you. [*Aside to Peggy.*] I lay it on thick, don't I?

Miss D. You really must excuse me; I can't perform to my satisfaction without the assistance of an instrument.

Plain. Well, well, cousin, then we'll hear you by and by; there's no hurry, I'm sure. Come, M. Fainwould, your glass is empty.

Mis D. Peggy, my love.

[*They rise to retire—Exit Mi s Durable.*

Plain. Peg, here, come back; I want to speak with you.

Peg. [*Returns.*] Well, papa.

Plain. Mr. Fainvould [*They rise*], you know I told you of a billet-doux that old Laury had received.

Peg. Yes, sir.

Plain. Coming through the passage to dinner, I picked it up.

Peg. and *Did.* } No!

Plain. Yes; I have it in my pocket—one of the richest compositions you ever beheld. I'll read it to you.

Did. [*Aside*] How unlucky! Now, if she sees it, she'll know the hand.

Plain. [*Reads*]. " *To the beautiful maid at the foot of the hill.* " Ha, ha, ha!

Dig. and *Peg.* } Ha, ha, ha!

[*Diddler crosses, and endeavours to keep Peggy from overlooking* Plainway *while he reads*

Plain. " *Most celestial of terrestrial beings! I have received a wound from your eyes, which baffles all surgical skill. The smile of her who gave it is the only balsam that can save it. Let me therefore supplicate admittance to your presence to-morrow, to know at once if I may live or die.*

" *That, if I'm to live, I may live your fond lover:*
And, if I'm to die, I may get it soon over.

" ADONIS. "

[*They all laugh.* — *Diddler appears much disconcerted.*

Plain. Why, this Adonis must be about as great a fool as his mistress, eh, sir? ha, ha, ha!

Did. Yes, sir; he, he, he! [*Aside*] They've found me out, and this is a quiz.

Peg. Or more likely, some poor knave, papa, that wants her money — ha, ha, ha!

Plain. Ha, ha, ha! Or, perhaps, a compound of both; eh, sir?

Did. Very likely, sir; he, he, he! [*Aside.*] They're at me.

Plain. But we must laugh her out of the connexion, and disappoint the rogue, however; though, I dare say, he lit-

tle thought to create so much merriment. So short-sighted is roguery.

Did. [*Aside.*] Short-sighted! it's all up, to a certainty.

Plain. So, she's returning, impatient of being left alone, I suppose. Now we'll smoke her—

Did [*Aside.*] I'll join the laugh, at all events.

Enter MISS DURABLE.

Mis D. Bless me, why, I'm quitte forsaken among you all—

Plain. Forsaken, my dear cousin! it's only for age and ugliness to talk of being forsaken; not for a beautiful maid like you—the most celestial of terrestrial beings!

[*All laugh.*

Miss D. [*Aside.*] I'm astonished—he laughing, too!

Did. [*Aside, crossing to her.*] Excuse my laughter, it's only in jest.

Miss D. In jest, sir?

Did. Yes. [*Whispers and winks.*]

Plain. Well, but, my dear cousin, I hope you'll be merciful to the tender youth. — Such a frown as that, now would kill him at once.

Miss D. Cousin Plainway, this insult is intolerable.— I'll not stay in your house another hour.

Plain. Nay but, my dear Laury, I didn't expect that truth would give offence. Well leave Mr. Fainwould to make our peace with you.

Did. [*Aside.*] Leave me alone with her! Oh! the devil!

Peg. Ay, do, M. Fainwould, endeavour to pacify her— pray induce her to continue a little longer " the beautiful maid at the foot of the hill."

[*Exeunt Plainway and Peggy. — Miss Durable and Diddler look sheepishly at each other.*

Did. [*Aside.*] I'm included in the guiz, as I'm a gentleman. *To her.*) My dear madam, how could you—

Miss D. How could I what, sir?

Did. Wear a pocket with a hole in it?

Miss D. I wear no pokets, which caused the fatal accident. — But, sir, I trust it is an accident, that will cause no change in your affection.

Did. (*Aside.*) Damn it! now she's going to be amorous. (*To her.*) None in the world, madam.— I assure you, I love you as much as ever I did—

Miss D. I fear my conduct is very imprudent. — If you should be discovered—

Did. It's not at all unlikely, madam, that I am already. [*Aside.*] Now she'll be boring me for explanations. — I must get her among them again. [*To her.*] Or, if I am not, if we don't take great care, I soon shall be: therefore, for better security, I think we'd better immediately join—

Miss D. Oh dear, sir! so soon? — I declare you quite agitate me vith the idea.

Did. Ma'am.

Miss D. It is so awful a ceremony, that really a little time—

Did. My dear ma'am, I didn't mean any thing about a ceremony.

Miss D. Sir!

Did. You misunderstand me; I—

Miss D. You astonish me, sir! no ceremory indeed! And would you then take advantage of my too susceptible heart, to ruin me? would you rob me of my innocence? would you despoil me of my honour? — Cruel, barbarous, inhuman man!

[*Affects to faint.*

Did. [*Supporting her.*] Upon my soul, madam, I would not interfere with your honour on any account. [*Aside.*] I mustmake an outrageous speech; there's nothing else will make her easy. [*Falls on his knees.*] Paragon of premature

divinity! what instrument of death, or torture, can equal the dreadful power of your frowns? Poison, pistols, pikes.

Enter PEGGY *at door, listening.*

steel-traps, and spring-guns, the thumb-screw or lead-kettle, the knoot or cat o' nine-tails, are impotent, compared with the words of your indignation! Cease then to wound by them a heart whose affection for you nothing can abate—whose—

Peg. [*Comes down, interrupting him, and showing his letter.*] So, sir, this is your fine effusion, and this is the fruit of it. —False, infamous man!

[*Retires up.*

Did. [*Aside to Miss Durable.*] I told you so. — You'd better retire, and I'll contrive to get off, — My dear Miss Planway—

Peg. Don't dear me, sir— I have done with you.

Did. If you would but hear—

Peg. I'll hear nothing, sir; you can't clear yourself: this duplicity can only arise from the meanest of motives, Mr. Mortimer.

Miss D. Mr. Mortimer! then I am the dupe, after all.

Peg. You're a mean—

Miss D. Base—

Peg. Deceitful—

Miss D. Abominable—

Did. [*Aside.*] Here's a breeze! This is raising the wind with a vengeance. My dear Miss Plainway, I—a—My dear Miss Durable [*Aside*], pray retire; in five minutes I'll come to you in the garden, and explain all to your satisfaction.

Miss D. And, if you don't—

Did. Oh, I will,— now, do go.

Peg. And you too, madam; aren't you ashamed—

Miss D. Dont talk to me in that style, miss it ill be-

comes me to account for my conduct to you; and I shall therefore leave you with perfect indifference to make your own construction. [*To him.*] You'll find me in the garden, sir.

[*Exit.*]

Did. [*Aside.*] Floating in the fish-pond, I hope. (*To Peggy.*] My dear Peggy, how could you for a moment believe—

Peg. I'll not listen to you— I'll go and expose you to my father immediately. — He'll order the servants to toss you in a blanket, and then to kick you out of doors.

Did. [*Holding her.*] So, between two stools, poor Jeremy comes to the ground at last.— Now, Peggy, my dear Peggy, I know I shall appease you. [*He takes her hand.*] That letter—I did write that letter — But, as a proof that I love you, and only you, aud that I will love you as long as I live, I'll run away with you directly.

Peg. Will you , this instant?

Did. I'll hire a po stchaise immediatly. [*Aside.*] That is, if I can get credit for one.

Peg. Go, and order it.

Did. I'm off. [*Going*] Nothing but disasters! here's the cockney coming back in a terrible rage, and I shall be discoveed.

Peg. How unlucky! Couldn't you get rid of him again?

Did. Keep out of the way, and I'll try.

[*She retires.*

Enter FAINWOULD.

Fain. So, sir—

Did. How do you do, again, sir? — Hasn't my servant left you three and four-pence yet? — Bless my soul, how stupid!

Fain. Sir, I want to see Mr. Plainway.

Did. Do you, sir? that's unlucky, — he's just gone out

— to take a walk in the fields.— Look through that window, and you may see him; there, you see, just under that hedge; now he's getting over a stile. If you like to follow him with me, I'll introduce him to you; but you'd better call again.

Fain Sir, I see neither a hedge nor a stile, and I don't believe a word you say.

D*id.*[*with affected dignity.*] Don't believe a word I say, sir!

F*ain.* No, sir.

D*id.* Sir, I desire you'll quit this house.

F*ain.* I shan't, sir.

D*id.* You shan't, sir?

F*ain.* No, sir—my business is with Mr. Plainway. I've a postchaise waiting for me at the door, and therefore have no time to lose.

D*id.* A postchaise waiting at the door, sir?

F*ain.* Yes, sir; the servant told me Mr. Fainwould was within, and I'll find him, too, or I'm very much mistaken. [*Exit.*

D*id.* A postchaise waiting at the door! we'll bribe the postboy, and jump into it.

Peg. Charming!

D*id.* Now, who shall I borrow a guinea of to bribe the postboy?

Enter JOHN.

John. Has that gentleman found my master, sir?

D*id.* Oh, yes, John, I showed him into the drawing-room. [*John is going.*] Stop, John, step this way. — Your name is John, isn't it?

John. Yes, sir.

D*id.* Well, how d'ye do, John? — Got a snug place here, John?

John. Yes, sir, very snug.

Did. Ay — good wages, good vails, eh?

John. Yes, sir, very fair.

Did. Um— you haven't got such a thing as a guinea about you, have you?

John. No, sir.

Did. Ay— that's all, John, I only asked for information. [*Exit John.*

Did. Gad—I said a civil thing or two to the gardener just now. I'll go and try him; and, to prevent all further rencontres, make my escape through the garden-gate. [*Going.*

Enter MISS DURABLE.

Oh Lord! here is old innocence again.

Miss D. Well, sir, I'm all impatience for this explanation. So you've got rid of Miss Peggy.

Did. Yes, I have pacified her, and she's retired to the—drawing room.— I was just coming to— you haven't got such a thing as a guinea about you, madam, have you? A troublesome postboy, that drove me this morning, is teasing me for his money. You see, I happened unfortunately to change my small—

Miss D. Oh! these things will happen, sir. [*Gives a purse.*] There's my purse, sir; take whatever you require.

Did. I'm robbing you, ma'am.

Miss D. Not at all, — you know you'll soon return it.

Did. [*Aside.*] That's rather doubtful. [*To her.*] I'll be with you again, madam, in a moment. [*Going.*

Miss D. What, sir! So, even your postboys are to be attended to before me.

Did. Ma'am.

Miss D. But I see through your conduct, sir. This is a mere expedient to avoid me again. — This is too much.

Did. [*Aside.*] What the devil shall I do now? Oh dear! oh Lord!

Miss D. What's the matter?

Did. Your cruelty has so agitated me—I faint—a little water—a little water will recover me. [*Falls into a chair.*] Pray get me a little water.

Miss D. Bless me, he's going into hysterics! Help—help—John, Betty, a little water immediately.

[*Exit.—Diddler runs off.*

Enter FAINWOULD.

Fain. No where to be found.—So Mr. Diddler gone now. They've found me out by my letter, and avoid me on purpose. But I'll not stir out of the house till I see Mr. Plainway, I'm determined; so I'll sit myself quietly down. [*Sits down in the chair Diddler has left.*] I'll make the whole family treat me with a little more respect, I warrant.

Enter MISS DURABLE, *hastily, with a glass of water, which she throws in his face. She screams; he rises in a fury.*

Miss D. Here, my love, ah!

Fain. Damnation, madam! what d'ye mean?

Miss D. Oh dear, sir! I took you for another gentleman.

Fain. Nonsense, madam! you cuoldn't mean to serve any gentleman in this way. Where is Mr. Plainway? I'll have satisfaction for this treatment.

Enter PLAINWAY.

Plain. [*Comes down.*] Hey-day! hey-day! cousin; why, who is this gentleman, and what is all this noise about!

Miss D. I'm sure, cousin, I don't know who the gent-

leman is. All that I can explain is, that Mr. Fainwould was taken ill in that chair; that I went to get some water to recover him; and the moment after, when I came back, I found his place occupied by that gentleman.

Fain. Madam, this is no longer a time for bantering. You found Mr. Fainwould's place occupied by me, who am Mr. Fainwould; and you found him suffering no illness at all, though you wanted to give him one.

Plain. and *Miss D.* } You Mr. Fainwould!

Fain. Yes, sir; and you've found out by this time, I suppose, that I'm perfectly acquainted with all your kind intentions towards me — that I know of your new son-in-law, Sir Robert Rental — that I am informed I am to make merriment for you — and that, if I'm refractory, your nephew, Mr. Diddler, is to pull my nose.

Plain. Sir Robert Rental, and my nephew Mr. Diddler! Why, Laury, this is some madman broke loose. My dear sir, I haven't a nephew in the world, and never heard of such people as Sir Robert Rental or Mr. Diddler, in the whole course of my life.

Fain. This is amazing!

Plain. It is, upon my soul! You say your name is Fainwould.

Fain. Certainly!

Plain. Then nothing but the appearance of the other Mr. Fainwould can solve the riddle.

Fain. The other Mr. Fainwould?

Plain. Yes, sir: there is another gentleman so calling himself now in this house; and he was bearer of a letter of introduction from——

Fain. My letter of introduction. — The rascal picked my pocket of it, in this very house, this morning, — I see

through it all! I dare say your house is robb'd by this time.

Plain. A villain! Why, where is he, cousin? Here, John — where are all the servants? [*Rings a bell.*

Enter JOHN.

Plain. Where is Mr. Fainwould?

John. What, the other, sir?

Plain. The other, sir? Then you knew this gentleman's name was Fainwould; and you never told me he was here this morning.

John. Yes, sir, I did; I sent you to him.

Plain. You sent me to the other fellow.

John. No, sir, I did not let in the other.

Plain. I suppose he got in at the window, then. — But where is he now?

John. I'm sure I don't know, sir; but I thought that gentleman was gone.

Fain. Why did you think so, sir?

John. Because, sir, the chaise is gone that you came in.

Plain. What!

Fain. Gone!

John. Yes, sir.

Plain. Why, then, the rascal's run off in it — and Peg — where is she? where is my daughter?

Miss D. Gone with him, cousin.

John. Here they are, sir. [*Exit.*

Enter DIDDLER, PEGGY, *and* SAM. — *Diddler dancing and singing.*

Plain. Sing away, my brave fellow, — I'll soon change your note.

Did. Tank'ye, sir; but it's chang'd already. Sam, pay

my debts to that young man, three-and-fourpence, [*Pointing to Fainwould.*] and give him credit for a breakfast on my account! — Ah! my dear old innocence [*To miss Durable.*], there's your purse again! When I'm at leisure, you shall have your explanation.

Miss D Oh! false Adonis!

Plain. And now, sir, what have you to answer to ——

Did. I plead guilty to it all. Idle habits, empty pockets, and the wrath of an offended uncle, made the shabby dog you see before you. — But my angry uncle has, on his death-bed, relented. This fine fatheaded fellow arrested our flight through the town, to put into my hand this letter, announcing the handsome bequest of ten thousand pounds, and inclosing me a hundred-pound note as earnest of his sincerity.

Plain. Um! I imagine you are the Mr. Mortimer she sometimes sighs about.

Did. The same, sir. At Bath, under that name, and under somewhat better appearances, I had the honour to captivate her. — Hadn't I, Peggy?

Peg. And isn't Mortimer your name?

Did. No, my dear, my legitimate appellation is Mr. Diddler.

Peg. What! am I to have a lover of the name of Diddler?

Sam. I'm sure Mrs. Diddler is a very pretty name.

Did. Don't be rude, Sam.

Plain. Well, sir, your promises are fair, there's no denying; but whether it would be fair to attend to them, depends entirely upon that gentleman. [*To Fainwould.*

Fain. As to me, Mr. Plainway, if your daughter has taken a fancy for another, I can't help it. Only let her refuse me respectfully, and I am satisfied.

Did. You are a very sensible fellow, and we have all a very high respect for you.

Fain. I'm satisfied.

Did. But I shall not be satisfied without the hope that all such poor idle rogues as I have been, may learn, by my disgraceful example —

Howe'er to vice or indolence inclin'd,
By honest industry to RAISE THE WIND.

THE END.

THE

DESERTED VILLAGE.

Sweet Auburn! loveliest village of the plain,
Where health and plenty cheer'd the labouring swain
Where smiling spring its earliest visit paid,
And parting summer's lingering blooms delay'd:
Dear lovely bowers of innocence and ease,
Seats of my youth, when every sport could please,
How often have I loiter'd o'er thy green,
Where humble happiness endear'd each scene!
How often have I paused on every charm;
The shelter'd cot, the cultivated farm,
The never-failing brook, the busy mill,
The decent church that topp'd the neighbouring hill,
The hawthorn bush, with seats beneath the shade,
For talking age and whispering lovers made!
How often have I bless'd the coming day,
When toil remitting lent its turn to play,

And all the village train, from labour free,
Led up their sports beneath the spreading tree:
While many a pastime circled in the shade,
The young contending as the old survey'd;
And many a gambol frolick'd o'er the ground;
And slights of art and feats of strength went round.
And still, as each repeated pleasure tired,
Succeeding sports the mirthful band inspired;
The dancing pair that simply sought renown,
By holding out to tire each other down!
The swain mistrustless of his smutted face,
While secret laughter titter'd round the place;
The bashful virgin's sidelong looks of love,
The matron's glance that would those looks reprove:
These were thy charms, sweet village! sports like these,
With sweet succession, taught e'en toil to please:
These round thy bowers their cheerful influence shed,
These were thy charms — but all these charms are fled.
Sweet, smiling village, loveliest of the lawn,
Thy sports are fled, and all thy charms withdrawn:
Amidst thy bowers the tyrant's hand is seen,
And desolation saddens all thy green:
Only one master grasps the whole domain,
And half a tillage stints thy smiling plain;
No more thy glassy brook reflects the day,
But choked with sedges works its weedy way;
Along thy glades, a solitary guest,
The hollow-sounding bittern guards its nest;
Amidst thy desert walks the lapwing flies,
And tires their echoes with unvaried cries.
Sunk are thy bowers in shapeless ruin all,
And the long grass o'ertops the mouldering wall;
And, trembling, shrinking from the spoiler's hand,
Far, far away thy children leave the land.

Ill fares the land, to hastening ills a prey;
Where wealth accumulates, and men decay;
Princes and lords may flourish, or may fade;
A breath can make them, as a breath has made:
But a bold peasantry, their country's pride,
When once destroy'd, can never be supplied.
A time there was, ere England's griefs began,
When every rood of ground maintain'd its man;
For him light labour spread her wholesome store,
Just gave what life required, but gave no more:
His best companions innocence and health;
And his best riches, ignorance of wealth.
But times are alter'd: trade's unfeeling train
Usurp the land, and dispossess the swain;
Along the lawn, where scatter'd hamlets rose,
Unwieldy wealth and cumbrous pomp repose;
And every want to luxury allied,
And every pang that folly pays to pride.
Those gentle hours that plenty bade to bloom,
Those calm desires that ask'd but little room,
Those healthful sports that graced the peaceful scene,
Lived in each look, and brighten'd all the green;
These, far departing, seek a kinder shore,
And rural mirth and manners are no more.
Sweet Auburn! parent of the blissful hour,
Thy glades forlorn confess the tyrant's power.
Here, as I take my solitary rounds,
Amidst thy tangling walks and ruin'd grounds,
And, many a year elapsed, return to view
Where once the cottage stood, the hawthorn grew,
Remembrance wakes with all her busy train,
Swells at my breast, and turns the past to pain.
In all my wanderings round this world of care,
In all my griefs — and God has given my share —

I still had hopes, my latest hours to crown,
Amidst these humble bowers to lay me down.
To husband out life's taper at the close,
And keep the flame from wasting by repose:
I still had hopes, for pride attends us still,
Amidst the swains to show my book-learn'd skill;
Around my fire an evening group to draw,
And tell of all I felt, and all I saw:
And as a hare, whom hounds and horns pursue,
Pants to the place from whence at first she flew,
I still had hopes, my long vexations pass'd,
Here to return — and die at home at last.
O bless'd retirement, friend to life's decline,
Retreats from care, that never must be mine,
How bless'd is he who crowns, in shades like these,
A youth of labour with an age of ease;
Who quits a world where strong temptations try,
And since 'tis hard to combat, learns to fly!
For him no wretches, born to work and weep,
Explore the mine, or tempt the dangerous deep;
No surly porter stands, in guilty state,
To spurn imploring famine from the gate;
But on he moves to meet his latter end,
Angels around befriending virtue's friend;
Sinks to the grave with unperceived decay,
While resignation gently slopes the way;
And, all his prospects brightening to the last,
His Heaven commences ere the world be pass'd.
Sweet was the sound, when oft at evening's close
Up yonder hill the village murmur rose;
There, as I pass'd with careless steps and slow,
The mingling notes came soften'd from below;
The swain responsive as the milk-maid sung,
The sober herd that low'd to meet their young;

The noisy geese that gabbled o'er the pool,
The playful children just let loose from school;
The watch-dog's voice that bay'd the whispering wind,
And the loud laugh that spoke the vacant mind;
These all in sweet confusion sought the shade,
And fill'd each pause the nightingale had made.
But now the sounds of population fail,
No cheerful murmurs fluctuate in the gale,
No busy steps the grass-grown footway tread,
But all the bloomy flush of life is fled:
All but yon widow'd, solitary thing,
That feebly bends beside the plashy spring:
She, wretched matron, forced in age, for bread,
To strip the brook with mantling cresses spread,
To pick her wintry faggot from the thorn,
To seek her nightly shed and weep till morn:
She only left of all the harmless train,
The sad historian of the pensive plain.
Near yonder copse, where once the garden smiled,
And still where many a garden flower grows wild,
There, where a few torn shrubs the place disclose,
The village preacher's modest mansion rose.
A man he was to all the country dear,
And passing rich with forty pounds a year;
Remote from towns he ran his godly race,
Nor e'er had changed, nor wish'd to change his place,
Unskilful he to fawn, or seek for power,
By doctrines fashion'd to the varying hour;
Far other aims his heart had learn'd to prize,
More bent to raise the wretched than to rise.
His house was known to all the vagrant train,
He chid their wanderings, but relieved their pain,
The long remember'd beggar was his guest,
Whose beard descending swept his aged breast;

The ruin'd spendthrift, now no longer proud,
Claim'd kindred there, and had his claims allow'd;
The broken soldier, kindly bade to stay,
Sat by his fire, and talk'd the night away;
Wept o'er his wounds, or, tales of sorrow done,
Shoulder'd his crutch, and show'd how fields were won.
Pleased with his guests, the good man learn'd to glow,
And quite forgot their vices in their woe;
Careless their merits or their faults to scan,
His pity gave ere charity began.
Thus to relieve the wretched was his pride,
And e'en his failings lean'd to virtue's side;
But in his duty prompt, at every call,
He watch'd and wept, he pray'd and felt, for all:
And, as a bird each fond endearment tries
To tempt its new-fledged offspring to the skies,
He try'd each art, reproved each dull delay,
Allured to brighter worlds, and led the way.
Beside the bed where parting life was laid,
And sorrow, guilt, and pain, by turns dismay'd,
The reverend champion stood. At his control,
Despair and anguish fled the struggling soul!
Comfort came down the trembling wretch to raise,
And his last faltering accents whisper'd praise.
At church, with meek and unaffected grace,
His looks adorn'd the venerable place;
Truth from his lips prevail'd with double sway,
And fools, who came to scoff, remain'd to pray.
The service pass'd, around the pious man,
With steady zeal, each honest rustic ran:
E'en children follow'd, with endearing wile,
And pluck'd his gown, to share the good man's smile.
His ready smile a parent's warmth express'd,
Their welfare pleased him and their cares distress'd;

To them his heart, his love, his griefs, were given,
But all his serious thoughts had rest in heaven.
As some tall cliff, that lifts its awful form,
Swells from the vale, and midway leaves the storm,
Though round its breast the rolling clouds are spread,
Eternal sunshine settles on its head!
Beside yon straggling fence, that skirts the way
With blossom'd furze, unprofitably gay,
There, in his noisy mansion, skill'd to rule,
The village master taught his little school:
A man severe he was, and stern to wiew,
I knew him well, and every truant knew;
Well had the boding tremblers learn'd to trace
The day's disasters in his morning face;
Full well they laugh'd with counterfeited glee
At all his jokes, for many a joke had he;
Full well the busy whisper, circling round,
Convey'd the dismal tidings when he frown'd;
Yet he was kind, or if severe in aught,
The love he bore to learning was in fault;
The village all declared how much he knew;
'Twas certain he could write and cipher too;
Lands he could measure, terms and tides presage,
And e'en the story ran that he could gauge:
In arguing, too, the parson own'd his skill,
For e'en though vanquish'd he could argue still;
While words of learned length, and thundering
Amazed the gazing rustics ranged around;
And still they gazed, and still the wonder grew sound,
That one small head should carry all he knew,
But pass'd is all his fame! The very spot,
Where many a time he triumph'd, is forgot.
  Near yonder thorn that lifts its head on high,
Where once the sign-post caught the passing eye,

Low lies that house where nut-brown draughts inspired,
Where grey-beard mirth and smiling toil retired,
Where village statesmen talk'd with looks profound,
And news much older than their ale went round.
Imagination fondly stoops to trace
The parlour splendours of that festive place;
The white-wash'd wall, the nicely sanded floor,
The varnish'd clock that click'd behind the door:
The chest contrived a double debt to pay,
A bed by night, a chest of drawers by day;
The pictures placed for ornament and use,
The twelve good rules, the royal game of goose;
The hearth, except when winter chill'd the day,
With aspen boughs, and flowers, and fennel, gay;
While broken tea-cups, wisely kept for show,
Ranged o'er the chimney, glisten'd in a row.
  Vain transitory splendours! could not all
Retrieve the tottering mansion from its fall!
Obscure it sinks, nor shall it more impart
An hour's importance to the poor man's heart;
Thither no more the peasant shall repair
To sweet oblivion of his daily care;
No more the farmer's news, the barber's tale,
No more the woodman's ballad shall prevail;
No more the smith his dusky brow shall clear,
Relax his ponderous strength, and lean to hear,
The host himself no longer shall be found
Careful to see the mantling bliss go round;
Nor the coy maid, half willing to be press'd,
Shall kiss the cup to pass it to the rest.
  Yes! let the rich deride, the proud disdain,
These simple blessings of the lowly train;
To me more dear, congenial to my heart,
One native charm than all the gloss of art;

Spontaneous joys, where nature has its play,
The soul adopts, and owns their first-born sway;
Lightly they frolic o'er the vacant mind,
Unenvied, unmolested, unconfined.
But the long pomp, the midnight masquerade,
With all the freaks of wanton wealth array'd,
In these, ere triflers half their wish obtain,
The toiling pleasure sickens into pain;
And, e'en while fashion's brightest arts decoy,
The heart, distrusting, asks if this be joy?
Ye friends to truth, ye statesmen, who survey
The rich man's joys increase, the poor's decay,
'Tis yours to judge how wide the limits stand
Between a splendid and a happy land.
Proud swells the tide with loads of freighted ore,
And shouting Folly hails them from her shore;
Hoards e'en beyond the miser's wish abound,
And rich men flock from all the world around.
Yet count our gains. This wealth is but a name
That leaves our useful products still the same.
Not so the loss. The man of wealth and pride
Takes up a space that many poor supplied;
Space for his lake, his park's extended bounds,
Space for his horses, equipage, and hounds;
The robe that wraps his limbs in silken sloth
Has robb'd the neighbouring fields of half their growth;
His seat, where solitary sports are seen,
Indignant spurns the cottage from the green;
Around the world each needful product flies,
For all the luxuries the world supplies:
While thus the land, adorn'd for pleasure all,
In barren splendour feebly waits the fall.
As some fair female, unadorn'd and plain,
Secure to please while youth confirms her reign,

Slights every borrow'd charm that dress supplies,
Nor shares with art the triumph of her eyes;
But when those charms are pass'd, for charms are frail,
When time advances, and when lovers fail,
She then shines forth, solicitous to bless,
In all the glaring impotence of dress:
Thus fares the land, by luxury betray'd,
In nature's simplest charms at first array'd;
But verging to decline, its splendours rise,
Its vistas strike, its palaces surprise;
While, scourged by famine, from the smiling land,
The mournful peasant leads his humble band;
And while he sinks, without one arm to save,
The country blooms — a garden and a grave!
Where, then, ah! where shall poverty reside,
To scape the pressure of contiguous pride?
If to some common's fenceless limits stray'd,
He drives his flock to pick the scanty blade,
Those fenceless fields the sons of wealth divide,
And e'en the bare-worn common is denied.
If to the city sped — What waits him there?
To see profusion that he must not share:
To see ten thousand baneful arts combined
To pamper luxury, and thin mankind;
To see each joy the sons of pleasure know,
Extorted from his fellow-creature's woe.
Here, while the courtier glitters in brocade,
There the pale artist plies the sickly trade;
Here, while the proud their long drawn pomp display,
There the black gibbet glooms beside the way;
The dome where pleasure holds her midnight reign,
Here, richly deck'd, admits the gorgeous train;
Tumultuous grandeur crowds the blazing square,
The rattling chariots clash, the torches glare.

Sure scenes like these no troubles e'er annoy !
Sure these denote one universal joy !
Are these thy serious thoughts ? — Ah , turn thine eyes
Where the poor houseless shiv'ring female lies :
She once , perhaps , in village plenty bless'd ,
Has wept at tales of innocence distress'd ;
Her modest looks the cottage might adorn ,
Sweet as the primrose peeps beneath the thorn ;
Now lost to all , her friends , her virtue fled ,
Near her betrayer's door she lays her head ,
And , pinch'd with cold , and shrinking from the shower ,
With heavy heart deplores that luckless hour ,
When idly first , ambitious of the town ,
She left her wheel and robes of country brown.
Do thine , sweet AUBURN , thine , the loveliest train ,
Do thy fair tribes participate her pain ?
E'en now , perhaps , by cold and hunger led ,
At proud men's doors they ask a little bread !
Ah , no. To distant climes , a dreary scene ,
Where half the convex world intrudes between ,
Through torrid tracts with fainting steps they go ,
Where wild Altama murmurs to their woe.
Far different there from all that charm'd before ,
The various terrors of that horrid shore ;
Those blazing suns that dart a downward ray ,
And fiercely shed intolerable day ;
Those matted woods where birds forget to sing ,
But silent bats in drowsy clusters cling ;
Those poisonous fields with rank luxuriance crown'd ,
Where the dark scorpion gathers death around :
Where at each step the stranger fears to wake
The rattling terrors of the vengeful snake ;
Where crouching tigers wait their hapless prey ,
And savage men more murderous still than they ;

While oft in whirls the mad tornado flies,
Mingling the ravaged landscape whith the skies.
Far different these from every former scene,
The cooling brook, the grassy-vested green,
The breezy covert of the warbling grove,
That only shelter'd thefts of harmless love.
Good Heaven! what sorrows gloom'd that parting
That call'd them from their native walks away;
When the poor exiles, every pleasure pass'd,
Hung round the bowers, and fondly look'd their last.
And took a long farewell, and wish'd in vain
For seats like these beyond the western main;
And, shuddering still to face the distant deep,
Return'd and wept, and still return'd to weep.
The good old sire the first prepared to go
To new-found worlds, and wept for others' woe;
But for himself, in conscious virtue brave,
He only wish'd for worlds beyond the grave.
His lovely daughter, lovelier in her tears,
The fond companion of his helpless years,
Silent went next, neglectful of her charms,
And left a lover's for her father's arms.
With louder plaints the mother spoke her woes,
And bless'd the cot where every pleasure rose;
And kiss'd her thoughtless babes with many a tear,
And clasp'd them close, in sorrow doubly dear:
Whilst her fond husband strove to lend relief
In all the silent manliness of grief.
O luxury! thou cursed by Heaven's decree,
How ill exchanged are things like these for thee!
How do thy potions, with insidious joy,
Diffuse their pleasures only to destroy!
Kingdoms by thee, to sickly greatness grown,
Boast of a florid vigour not their own;

At every draught more large and large they grow,
A bloated mass of rank unwieldy woe;
Till, sapp'd their strength and every part unsound,
Down, down they sink, and spread a ruin round.
E'en now the devastation is begun,
And half the business of destruction done;
E'en now, methinks, as pondering here I stand,
I see the rural virtues leave the land.
Down where yon anchoring vessel spreads the sail,
That idly waiting flaps with every gale,
Downward they move a melancholy band,
Pass from the shore, and darken all the strand.
Contented toil, and hospitable care,
And kind connubial tenderness are there;
And piety, with wishes placed above,
And steady loyalty, and faithful love.
And thou, sweet Poetry, thou loveliest maid,
Still first to fly where sensual joys invade;
Unfit, in these degenerate times of shame,
To catch the heart, or strike for honest fame;
Dear charming nymph, neglected and decried;
My shame in crowds, my solitary pride;
Thou source of all my bliss, and all my woe,
That found'st me poor at first, and keep'st me so;
Thou guide, by which the nobler arts excel,
Thou nurse of every virtue, fare thee well;
Farewell! and O! where'er thy voice be tried,
On Torno's cliffs, or Pambamarca's side,
Whether where equinoctial fervours glow,
Or winter wraps the polar world in snow,
Still let thy voice, prevailing over time,
Redress the rigours of the inclement clime,
Aid slighted Truth, with thy persuasive strain;
Teach erring man to spurn the rage of gain;

Teach him, that states of native strength possess'd,
Though very poor, may still be very bless'd;
That trade's proud empire hastes to swift decay,
As ocean sweeps the labour'd mole away;
While self-dependent power can time defy,
As rocks resist the billows and the sky.

SECONDE PARTIE

EXERCICES.

DE LA PRONONCIATION.

La prononciation étant une espèce de contrat passé entre les hommes de même race, ce contrat doit être communiqué par l'un des signataires, lequel devient alors un témoin de la manière de prononcer convenue entre les individus de sa nation.

Le maître anglais lit donc à haute et intelligible voix la première phrase du premier chapitre du *Ministre de Wakefield* (Vicar of Wakefield), par exemple, et tous les élèves (si c'est à une classe que la leçon est donnée), disent après lui et successivement, tous les mots de la phrase, en cherchant à imiter le son qui frappe leur oreille.

Le maître continuera à lire, et les élèves à répéter de la sorte, la seconde, la troisième, la quatrième phrase, et si l'on veut jusqu'à la fin du paragraphe; car on est libre de limiter à quelques phrases ce premier exercice, dont le résultat véritable dépendra moins de la quantité des mots qui seront lus, que de la manière dont la lecture sera faite : conséquemment c'est surtout l'attention qu'il s'agit de captiver.

Et comme le retour fréquent des mêmes mots et des mêmes syllabes peut seul en fixer la prononciation dans la mémoire de l'élève, on s'attachera, dans le commence-

ment de cet exercice, à revenir sur les phrases déjà lues, plutôt qu'à aller en avant; on se défiera des impressions fugitives qui effleurent l'esprit, dans le passage rapide à divers objets; on n'attendra que d'une répétition suivie la durée de toutes les acquisitions. Ainsi on se tiendra à un petit nombre de pages qui fourniront ensuite les ressources nécessaires de la prononciation, par les rapports qu'on sera à même d'établir entre les mots qu'elles renferment et ceux qu'on rencontrera pour la première fois.

Mais pour mieux s'assurer encore de la conservation de cette sorte de dépôt, il ne sera pas inutile de noter les syllabes qui diffèrent de la manière française, et d'ajouter la répétition de ce petit recueil à celle qui a été recommandée précédemment.

On peut déjà remarquer que l'on fait dépendre de l'attention le succès de cet exercice, et que cet exercice repose lui-même sur ce principe : *Apprendre quelque chose, et y rapporter tout le reste.*

Dans les cas où l'on serait privé des secours d'un maître, il faudrait, en dépit de l'opinion qui conseille l'usage de la prononciation figurée, se borner à lire les mots à la manière française, parce qu'alors n'ayant point contracté de fausse habitude, il serait plus facile, dans l'occasion, d'acquérir ce qui manquerait à cet égard.

EXERCICES DE MÉMOIRE.

En continuant à travailler la prononciation, car on devra s'en occuper dans tous les exercices qu'on fera dans la suite, on apprendra par cœur le texte et la traduction de chaque paragraphe, et l'on répètera le plus souvent que possible, à partir du commencement. La rapidité des progrès est la conséquence nécessaire de la fréquente répétition.

Un moyen certain de fixer davantage l'attention de l'élève, est de lui faire écrire la leçon qu'il doit apprendre par cœur ; ses yeux se familiarisent ainsi avec la représentation écrite des mots parlés ; or, on sait que la vue joue le plus grand rôle dans l'acquisition de l'orthographe.

Pour s'assurer des résultats de cet exercice on demande alternativement, et au hasard, une phrase anglaise et une phrase française ; et dans l'un ou l'autre cas, l'élève donne immédiatement la traduction ou le texte correspondant à la phrase demandée. Exemple :

Que signifie : « I was ever of opinion, that the honest « man who married and brought up a large family, did « more service than he who continued single, and only « talked of population. »

— Rép. « J'ai toujours eu l'opinion que l'honnête « homme, etc. » (L'élève cite en entier la première phrase de la traduction.)

— Dites en anglais : « Elle lisait assez couramment dans « quelque livre anglais que ce fût, et personne ne la sur- « passait, tant pour la cuisine que pour l'art de confire et « de conserver les fruits. »

— Rép. « The could read any English book without « much spelling, etc. » (L'élève répète en entier la phrase anglaise correspondante.)

— Que veut dire : « We had an elegant house, situated « in a fine country, and a good neighbourhood. »

— Rép. « Nous avions une maison élégante, etc.

— Comment traduit-on : « Nous n'avions ni révolu- « tions à craindre, ni fatigues à essuyer ; toutes nos aven-

« tures se passaient au coin du feu, et toutes nos transmi-
« grations étaient de la chambre bleue à la brune. »

— Rép. « We had no revolutions to fear, nor fatigues « to undergo; all our adventures were, etc. »

— Quel est le sens de : « So that if we had not very « rich, we generally had very happy friends about us; for « this remark will hold good through life, that the poorer « the guest, the better pleased he ever is with being treated; « and as somemen gaze with admiration at the colours of « a tulip, or the wing of a butterfly, so I was by nature an « admirer of happy human face. »

— Rép. « En sorte que si nous n'avions pas autour de « nous des amis très-riches, nous en avions communé- « ment de très-contents; car c'est une remarque vraie dans « la vie, etc. »

— Dem. « Mes enfants, conçus dans la tempérance, et « élevés sans mollesse, étaient sains et bien constitués: « mes garçons étaient robustes et actifs, mes filles belles « et brillantes de fraîcheur. »

— Rép. « My children, the offspring of temperance, as « they were educated without softness, so, etc. »

— Dem. « I was early initiated into this important di- « spute, on which so many laborious volumes have been « written. »

— Rép. « J'avais été initié de bonne heure dans cette « dispute importante, qui a, etc. »

— Dem. « Comme M. Wilmot savait que j'étais en état « de donner à mon fils un très-honnête établissement, il « n'était pas éloigné de ce mariage, de sorte que les deux

« familles vivaient ensemble dans toute l'intimité qui a « coutume de précéder une alliance presque arrangée. »

— Rép. « As M. Wilmot knew that I could make a « very handsome settlement on my son, etc. »

— Dem. « It would be endless to describe the different « sensations of both families when I divulged the news of « our misfortune; but what others felt was slight to what « the lovers appeared to endure. »

— Rép. « Je ne finirais pas si j'entreprenais de décrire « les diverses sensations qu'éprouvèrent les deux familles « à la nouvelle de notre désastre, etc. »

— Dem. « Mais ce qui m'étonnait surtout, c'était de « voir que, quoiqu'il fût mon débiteur, il soutenait ses « opinions avec autant de ténacité que si j'eusse été le « sien. »

— Rép. « But what surprised me most was, that though « he was a money-borrower, he defended, etc. »

— Dem. « Our little habitation was situated at the foot « of a sloping hill, sheltered with a beautiful underwood « behind, and a prattling river before; on one side a « meadow, on the other a green. »

— Rép. « Notre petite habitation était située au pied « d'une colline; un beau bois l'abritait par derrière, sur le « devant coulait un ruisseau, etc. »

— Dem. « Les promenades publiques ne sont pas belles, « mais l'ombrage épais de leurs grands arbres a quelque « chose de respectable et de délicieux. »

— Rép. « The public walks have no great beauty, but « the thick shade of the trees, etc. »

— Dem. « We left this wretched lodging at day-break, « and about six this morning came safe here, where I got « immediately into bed. »

— Rép. « Nous avons quitté ce lieu désagréable, à la « pointe du jour, et ce matin, vers six heures, etc. »

— Dem. « Homme présomptueux, prétends-tu décou- « vrir la raison pourquoi tu as été formé si faible, si petit, « si aveugle? »

— Rép. « Presumptuous man! the reason wouldst thou [find,
« Why form'd so weak, so little, and so blind?

— Dem. « Heav'n from all creatures hides the book of [Fate,
« All but the page prescrib'd, their present state;
« From brutes what men, from m n what [spirits know:
« Or who could suffer Being here below?

— Rép. « Le ciel cache à toutes les créatures le livre des « destins, excepté la page nécessaire, celle de leur état pré- « sent; il cache aux bêtes ce que l'homme connaît, aux » hommes ce que connaissent les esprits: autrement qui » pourrait ici-bas supporter son existence? »

— Dem. « Nature to these, without profusion, kind,
« The proper organs, proper pow'rs assign'd;
« Each seeming want compensated of course,
« Here with degrees of swiftness, there of force;
« All in exact proportion to their state;
« Nothing to add, and nothing to abate. »

— Rép. « La nature, libérale sans profusion, leur a « assigné des organes, des facultés propres; elle les a dé- « dommagées de chaque besoin apparent, les unes par des

« degrés de vitesse, les autres par des degrés de force, tous « dans une proportion exacte avec leur état. Il n'y a rien à « ajouter, rien à diminuer. »

— Dem. « Far as Creation's ample range extends,
« The scale of sensual, mental pow'rs ascends :
« Mark how it mounts, to Man's imperial race,
« From the green myriads in the peopled
« grass. »

— Rép. « Autant les divers et nombreux degrés de la « création s'étendent, autant se diversifient les degrés des « facultés sensitives et intellectuelles. Quelle gradation de- « puis ces millions d'insectes qui peuplent les champs, jus- « qu'à la race impériale de l'homme ! »

On parcourt ainsi l'Epitomé entier, et on a soin de revenir souvent sur cet important exercice.

Il est encore un moyen de forcer l'attention, en interrogeant comme je vais l'expliquer.

Voici, par exemple, une phrase du livre :

« Thus, after we were refreshed at the next inn, and « had dined together, as M. Burchell was going to a dif- « ferent part of the country, he took leave, and we pur- « sued journey; my wife observing, as we went, that she « liked him extremely, and protesting, that if he had birth « and fortune to entitle him to match into such a family as « ours, she knew no man she would sooner fix upon. »

Si on demande *she like*, l'élève doit réciter la phrase ou dire seulement *that she like him extremely*, et voilà une locution suc. On demande *Journey*? L'élève répond : *And we pursued our journey*. Demande-t-on *Part*? L'élève répond : *A different part of the country*.

Et de même pour tous les mots de cette phrase, et pour

toutes les phrases du livre. Par ces répétitions continuelles et non interrompues, on vérifie si l'élève a retenu ce qu'il a appris, et on s'assure qu'il ne l'oubliera pas. A chaque fois la mémoire s'enrichit de quelques alliances de mots et l'intelligence humaine achève cet ouvrage.

EXERCICES INTELLECTUELS.

Quand on s'est bien assuré du résultat de la mémoire, et que l'élève connaît l'Epitomé par phrases, on entre dans les détails.

D'abord on demande les parties de phrase. L'élève remarque aussitôt toutes les ressources renfermées dans quelques pages, et conséquemment celles qu'il peut retirer de l'Epitomé entier. Cela lui donne la confiance et le courage nécessaires pour le travail qu'il doit faire dans la suite.

De ces parties de phrase on déduit aisément le sens des expressions et celui des mots. Ainsi, le vocabulaire de l'élève s'enrichit chaque jour et presqu'à son insu, et de telle sorte qu'avant d'être à la fin de l'Epitomé, il s'aperçoit qu'il est en état de comprendre un prosateur anglais quelconque.

A cause de l'importance que j'attache à cet exercice, je vais en donner des exemples d'une certaine étendue, et on fera bien de les augmenter encore.

Cet exercice consiste donc à demander une partie de phrase, et à faire donner ensuite le sens de chaque mot.

Partie de phrase :

« Il élevait une nombreuse famille. — He brought up a large family. »

He brought up, il élevait. — a family, une famille. — large, nombreuse.

« L'honnête homme qui se mariait. — The honest man « who married. »

The honest man, l'honnête homme — who, qui — married, se mariait.

« Je fus toujours d'opinion, — I was ever of opinion. »

I was, je fus—ever, toujours — of opinion, d'opinion.

« Penser sérieusement au mariage.—to think seriously of « matrimony. »

To think, penser — seriously, serieusement — of matrimony, du mariage.

« Choisir ma femme — to chose my wife. »

To chose, choisir — my wife, ma femme.

« Aucune ne pouvait la surpasser. — None could excel « her. »

None, aucune—could, pouvait — excel, surpasser—her, elle.

« Elle se vantait d'être—she prided herself upon being. »

She, elle—prided herself, se vantait — upon being, d'être.

« J'avais à peine pris les ordres depuis un an. — I had « scarce taken orders a year. »

I had, j'avais — taken, pris — scarce, à peine — orders, les ordres — a year, depuis un an.

«, Elle pouvait lire tout livre anglais sans beaucoup épeler.— She could read any english book without much « spelling. »

She could, elle pouvait — read, lire. —any, chaque — english book, livre anglais. — without spelling, sans épelant —much beaucoup.

« Il parlait seulement population. — He only talked of population. »

He talked, il parlait — only, seulement — of population, de population.

« Pour lui rendre justice. — To do her justice. »

To do, pour faire — her, à elle — justice, justice.

« Il rendait plus de service que celui qui — He did more « service than he who. »

He did, il faisait — more, plus — service, service — than, que — he, celui — who, qui.

« Il y avait peu de dames de campagne. — There were « few country ladies. »

There were, il y avait — few country ladies, peu de dames de campagne.

« Je ne pouvais jamais trouver que nous devinssions « plus riches. — I could never find that we grew richer. »

I could, je pouvais — never jamais — find, trouver, — that, que — we grew, nous devinssions — richer, plus riches.

« Nous nous aimions tendrement. — We loved each « other tenderly. »

We loved, nous aimions — each other, l'un l'autre — tenderly, tendrement.

« Notre tendresse augmentait à mesure que nous deve- « nions vieux. — Our fondness increased as we greold. »

Our fondness, notre tendresse — increased, augmentait — as, comme — we grew, nous devenions — old, vieux. »

« Il n'y avait rien qui pût nous rendre indisposés. —
» There was nothing that could make us angry. »

There was, il y avait — nothing, rien — that, qui — could, pouvait—make us, nous faire—angry, indisposés. »

« Nous avions une maison élégante, située dans une
» belle campagne. — We had an elegant house, situated
» in a fine country. »

We had, nous avions—an elegant house, une maison élégante—situated, située—in a fine country, dans une belle campagne.

« L'année était employée en amusemens moraux ou
» champêtres. — The year was spent in a moral or rural
» amusement. »

The year, l'année — was spent, était employée — in a moral or rural amusement, dans un amusement moral ou champêtre.

« Nous n'avions pas de révolution à craindre.—We had
» no revolution to fear. »

We had, nous avions—no revolution, aucune révolution-to fear, à craindre.

« Toutes nos aventures étaient au coin du feu.—All our
» adventures were by the fire side. »

All, toutes—our adventures, nos aventures—were, étaient —by the fire side, au coin du feu.

« Nous demeurions près de la route.—We lived near the
» road. »

We lived, nous demeurions — near, près—the road, la route.

« Pour goûter notre vin de groseilles. — To taste our « gooseberry wine.

To taste, pour goûter. — Our wine, notre vin — gooseberry, de groseilles.

« Je proteste avec la véracité d'un historien. — I pro- « fess with the veracity of an historian. »

I profess, je proteste — with, avec — the veracity, la véracité — of, de — an historian, un historien.

« Je n'en ai jamais vu aucun trouver le moindre dé- « faut. — I never knew one of them find fault with. »

I knew, je connus — never, jamais — one, un — of them d'eux — find fault with, trouver un défaut à.

« Ils nous faisaient des visites très-fréquentes. — they « came very frequently to see us. »

They came, ils venaient — very frequently, très-fréquemment — to see, voir — us, nous.

« Ils devaient être assis à la même table que nous — they « should sit with us at the same table. »

They should sit, ils devaient s'asseoir — with us, avec nous — at the same table, à la même table.

« Nous étions communément entourés d'amis très-heu- « reux. — We generally had very happy friends about us. »

We had, nous avions — generally, généralement — friends des amis — very happy, très heureux — about us — autour de nous.

« Quelques-uns ne nous honoraient pas grandement par « leur prétention à notre parenté. — Some of them did us « no great honor by them claises of kindred. »

Some of them, quelques-uns—did us no, ne nous faisaient pas—great honor, grand honneur — by, par—these claims, ces prétentions—of kindred, de parenté.

« The poorer the guest, the better pleased he ever is « with being treated.—Le convive le plus pauvre est aussi « le plus sensible à la bonne réception. »

The guest, le convive — the poorer, le plus pauvre — the better, le mieux — pleased, est flatté — he is, il est — with being, en étant — treated, traité.

Quand quelqu'un de nos parents se trouvait d'un mauvais caractère.—When any one of our relations was found to be a person of a very bad character.

When, quand—any one, quelqu'un — of our relations, de nos parents—was found, était trouvé—to be, être — a person—une personne—of a very bad charaeter, d'un très mauvais caractère.

J'avais soin de lui prêter ou une redingote, ou une paire de bottes, ou quelquefois même un cheval de peu de prix I ever took care to lend him a riding coat, or a pair of boots, or sometimes a horse of small value.

J took, je prenais—ever, toujours—care, soin—to lend him, de lui prêter—a riding coat, une redingote — or, ou—a pair of boots, uue paire de bottes—or sometimes, ou quelquefois—a horse, un cheval—of small value—d'une petite valeur.

Nous vécûmes ainsi plusieurs années dans un état de bonheur parfait. — Thus we lived several years in a state of much happiness.

Thus, ainsi — we lived, nous vécûmes — several years, plusieurs années—in a state, dans un état—of much happiness, de beaucoup de bonheur.

Mon verger était souvent maraudé par les écoliers.—My orchard was often robbed by schoolboys.

My orchard, mon verger—was, était—often, souvent—robbed, volé—by schoolboys, par des écoliers.

Quand j'étais au milieu de ce petit cercle, qui promettait de devenir l'appui de ma vieillesse.—When I stood in the midst of the little circle, which promised to be the supports of my declining age.

When, quand —I stood, je me tenais — in the midst, dans le milieu—of the little circle, du petit cercle— which, qui—promised, promettait—to be, d'être—the supports, les soutiens—of my declining age, de ma vieillesse.

« Notre fils aîné s'appelait *George*, du nom de son oncle » qui nous avait laisé dix mille livres sterling.—Our eldest » son was named George, after his uncle, who left us ten » thousand pounds »

Our, notre—eldest, aîné—son, fils—was, était—named, nommé—after, d'après—his uncle, son oncle—who, qui — left, laissa—us, à nous—ten, dix—thousand, mille—pounds livres.

« Le simple extérieur est si peu de chose à mes yeux, que » je me souviendrais à peine de ces détails, si ce n'eût été » dans le pays un sujet général de conversation. — Mere » outside is so very trifling a circumstance with me, that I » should have scarce remembered to mention it, had it not » been a general topic of conversation in the country. »

Mere, simple—outside, l'extérieur — is, est — so very, tant—trifling, frivole—a circumstance, une circonstance —with me, avec moi — that, que—I should have, j'aurais —scarce, à peine—remembered, souvenu (se)—to mention it, de la mentionner — had, eût — it, cela — not, non — been, été—a general topic, un sujet général—of conversation, de conversation—in the country, dans le pays.

« L'une triomphait du premier coup ; l'autre par des efforts habilement répétés. — The one vanquished by a » single blow, the other by efforts successfully repeated.

The one, l'une—vanquished, triomphait—by, par — a single, un seul,—blow, coup—the other, l'autre—by efforts, par des efforts—successfully, heureusement—repeated, répétés.

« La vivacité de l'une m'amusait quand j'étais gai, le » bon sens de l'autre me plaisait quand j'étais sérieux.— » The one entertained me with her vivacity when I was gay, » the other with her sense when I was serious. »

The one, l'une—entertained, régalait — me, moi — with her vivacity, avec sa vivacité — when, quand — I was gay, j'étais gai — the other, l'autre — with her sense, avec son bon sens — when, quand — I was, j'étais—serious, sérieux.

« Mon second fils Mosès, que je voulais livrer aux affaires, reçut à la maison une sorte d'éducation mixte. — » My second boy Moses, whom I designed for business » received a sort of miscellaneous education at home. »

My second boy, mon second fils,—whom, lequel—I designed, je désignais—for, pour—business, les affaires—received, reçut—a sort, une espèce—of miscellaneous education, d'éducation mixte—at home, à la maison.

« Mais il serait inutile de décrire plus en détail le carac-
» tère particulier de ces enfans, qui n'avaient que fort peu
» vu le monde. — But it is needless to attempt describing
» the particular characters of young people, that had seen
» but very little of the world.

But, mais— it is, il est—needless, inutile—to attempt, d'essayer— describing, décrivant—the particular characters, les caractères particuliers—of young people, du jeune peuple—that, qui—had seen, avait vu—but, mais—very little, très-peu—of the world, du monde.

» A proprement parler, ils n'avaient qu'un seul caractère,
» celui d'être également généreux, crédules, simples et in-
« capables d'offenser.—Properly speaking, they had but
» one character; that of being all equally generous, cre-
» dulous, simple and inoffensive. »

Properly, proprement— speaking, parlant—they had, ils avaient— but, mais—one character, un caractère—that, celui—of being, d'étant—all, tous—equally, également—generous, généreux—credulous, crédules— simples, simples — and inoffensive, et inoffensifs.

Ce que je viens d'indiquer sur le premier chapitre, on le fait successivement sur le second, sur le troisième, sur le quatrième; et en un mot, sur toutes les parties de l'*epitome*.

On reviendra aussi souvent qu'il sera possible sur cet important exercice.

Ensuite, on s'assure du sens, en exigeant que l'élève réponde en anglais aux questions qui lui sont faites dans cette langue, si le maître est anglais, ou autrement, en français : c'est au surplus une circonstance à laquelle il ne

faut pas s'arrêter; car ce qui importe à l'instruction de l'élève, ce ne sont pas les demandes, ce sont les réponses, et on exige que celles-ci aient toute l'abondance possible.

Nous allons donner un exemple un peu étendu de cette manière de vérifier l'attention de l'élève; mais on doit bien penser qu'il sera nécessaire de l'étendre encore et d'y revenir de temps à autre.

Dem. Quand le ministre songea-t-il sérieusement au mariage? — Rép: When, he had scarce taken orders a year.

Dem. Par quel motif? — Rép: From the motive, that the honest man who married and brought up a large family, did more service than he who continued single, and only talked population.

Dem. Quelle était l'éducation de la femme du ministre? — Rép: She could read any english book without much spelling; but for pickling, preserving, and cookery, none could excel her.

Dem. S'attribuait-elle elle-même d'autre mérite? — Rép: She prided herself upon being an excellent contriver in house keeping.

Dem. Comment était l'habitation du ministre? — Rep: He had an elegant house, situated in a fine country.

Dem. Comment la vie de la famille se passait-elle? — Rép: The year was spent in a moral or a rural amusement, in visiting her rich neighbours, and relieving such as were poor.

Dem. Par quels moyens le ministre parvenait-il à se débarrasser de ses parens qui avaient un mauvais caractèr ,

ou des hôtes importuns ? — RÉP : Upon their leaving his house, he ever took care to lend them a riding coat, or a pair of boots, or sometimes a horse of small value.

DEM. Quelles étaient les petites contrariétés dont le bonheur du ministre était entremêlé ? REP. His orchard was often robbed by schoolboys, and his wife's custards plundered by the cats or the children. The Squire would sometimes fall aslep in the most pathetic part of his sermon, or the lady return his wife's civilities at church with a mutilated curtsey.

DEM. Comment étaient les enfans du ministre ? — REP. His sons were hardy and active, his daughter beautiful and blooming.

DEM. Dans quelle circonstance le ministre était-il transporté d'allégresse ? — RÉP. : When he saw his little ones about him.

DEM. Quelle était la réponse de mistress Primrose aux personnes qui la complimentaient sur ses enfans ? — RÉP. Ay neighbourg, she would answer, they are as heaven made them ; handsome enough, if they be good enough ; for handsome is that handsome does.

DEM. Que remarquait-on d'étrange à Wakefield ?

REP. Three wants : a parson wanting pride, young men wanting wives, and alehouses wanting customers.

DEM. Qu'est-ce que le ministre maintenait avec Whiston ?

REP. That it was unlawful for a priest of the church of England, after the death of his first wife, to take a second.

DEM. Pourquoi le ministre composa-t-il pour sa femme

encore vivante, une épitaphe semblable à celle que W. Whiston composa pour la sienne?

Rep. For several very useful purposes: it admonished his wife of her duty to him, and his fidelity to her; it inspired her with a passion for fame, and constantly put her in mind of her end.

Dem. Comment le ministre empêchait-il les dames de s'éloigner à la fin du repas?

Rep. He generally ordered the table to be removed; and sometimes, with music master's assistance, the girls would give them a very agreeable concert.

Dem. Que répondit le ministre au parent qui lui annonça la nouvelle de son désastre?

Rép: I'll go this moment and inform the company of my circumstances; and as for the argument, I even here retract my former concessions in the old gentleman's favour, nor will I allow him now to he a husband, in any sense of the expression.

On voit combien ces sortes de questions sont faciles, puisqu'elles sont formées d'une ou de plusieurs parties des phrases qui se trouvent complétées par les réponses de l'élève, et on reconnaîtra plus d'un avantage à les multiplier et à les renouveler. — Elles fournissent à l'élève une nouvelle occasion de revenir sur ce qu'il sait, en même temps qu'elles lui font acquérir une confiance raisonnable dans le résultat de son travail, en lui montrant les ressources qui sont déjà à sa disposition.

C'est par les mêmes motifs qu'on insiste sur le sens des mots et des expressions. — Les uns et les autres s'expliquent dans les cas douteux, c'est-à-dire lorsque la traduction n'est

pas bien littérale, par le rapprochement de phrases entre elles; et cette espèce de dissection mettra en évidence la grande quantité de mots que l'on possède, quand on sait bien quelques pages d'un livre. On a toujours soin de faire justifier les réponses de l'élève par la citation de la phrase ou des phrases dont le mot demandé fait partie. Voici un exemple.

Sérieusement, seriously. — Mariage, matrimony. — Famille, family. — Homme, man. — Élevait, brought up. — Honnête, honest. — A peine, scarce. — Plus, more. — Qui, who. — Avant, before. — A penser, to think. — Une Femme, a woman. — Sans, without. — Toujours, ever. Qualités, qualities. — Plus riches, richer. — Livres anglais, english book. — Choisir, choses. — Quoique, though. — Surpasser, excel. — Dames, ladies. — Aussi, also. — Maison, house. — Année, year. — A craindre, to fear. — Le coin du feu, the fire side. — Aventures, adventures. — Amis, friends. — Remarque, remark. — Vie, life. — Goûter, to taste. — Le monde, the world. — Les couleurs, the colours. — Parents, relations. — degré, remove. — Parmi, amongst. — Fréquemment, frequently. — Vin, wine. — Secours, help. — Avec, with. — Souvent, often. — Étaient, were. — Le voyageur, the traveller. — Heureux, happy. — Véracité, veracity. — Honneur, honor. — Historien, historian. — Étranger, stranger. — Un, one. — Quand, when. — l'aile, the wing. — Le plus pauvre, the poorer. — Pour voir, to see. — Cependant, however. — L'hôte, the guest. — Rien, nothing. — Vieux, old. — Tendrement, tenderly. — Insistait, insisted. etc., etc.

C'est ainsi qu'on fera revenir l'élève sur ce qu'il a appris, et qu'il se rendra compte lui-même du grand nombre de

mots qui sont à sa disposition, quand il sait quelques paragraphes du *vicaire*. La répétition de cet exercice sur un plus grand nombre de passages, lui montrera encore de mieux en mieux toutes les ressources qu'il doit attendre de sa mémoire.

Dans ce travail préparatoire, dont le résultat est immense, les mêmes mots s'offrant avec des modifications, l'élève apprend alors la valeur des syllables, en se représentant les circonstances différentes où ces mots sont employés. Ces observations qu'il fait mentalement, et sans parler, suffisent pour le diriger dans ses lectures aussi bien que dans ses discours, et c'est ainsi qu'il apprend par lui-même l'anglais comme il a appris le français.

Comme l'élève ne se douterait pas de cette importante acquisition, si on ne la lui faisait pas remarquer; on lui adressera donc des questions propres à provoquer les rapprochemens des mots.

Exemple :

A la seule inspection des mots *married*, *continued*, *prided*, *loved*, *increased*, *situaded*, *lived*, *remembered*, *insisted*, *pleased*, *treated*, *desired*, *robbed*, etc.; on reconnaît que la syllable *ed* est l'indication d'un temps passé.

Les mots *spelling*, *preserving*, *visiting*, *relieving*, *finding*, *desribing*, *speaking*, *doing*, *keeping*, *being*, *exhorting*, *wanting*, *supporting*, *having*, *living*, etc., nous montrent que la syllable *ing* est la terminaison d'un temps présent.

En comparant les mots *herself*, *myself*, *yourself*, *itself*, *himself*, on peut remarquer que la syllable *self* s'adjoint aux pronoms pour leur donner sans doute plus de force et pour faire connaître qu'ils sont l'objet de l'action dans la phrase.

Si l'on rapproche les mots *graceful*, *delightful*, *beautiful*, *successful*, etc., on devine sans peine le sens de la syllable *ful* (plein, pleine) : elle ne laisse rien à ajouter à l'idée primitive du mot qu'elle termine.

Les mots *able*, *happy*, etc., comparés avec *unable*, *unhappy*, font comprendre que la syllable *un* au commencement des mots, indique une négation ou un contraire.

Les mots *seriously*, *tenderly*, *generally*, *usually*, *certainly*, *successfully*, *equally*, *chiefly*, *entirely*, *early*, *constantly*, *earnestly*, *violently*, *actually*, *sufficiently*, *joyfully*, *universally*, *exquisitally*, *instantly*, *extremely*, qui expriment des modifications aux adjectifs et aux verbes, sont évidemment formés de l'adjectif et de la syllable adverbiale *ly*.

C'est ainsi qu'on s'enrichit chaque jour sans sortir de ce que l'on sait par cœur; et plus on répète ces divers exercices, plus on a lieu de reconnaître qu'un nombre de pages assez borné renferme les syllables radicales d'une langue.

On commence ensuite l'étude des expressions. Non-seulement on réunit des lettres pour faire des mots ; mais on assemble des mots pour composer des expressions : or, les expressions, comme les mots, sont des conventions. Il faut donc apprendre les uns et les autres par l'usage ; et en se rendant compte des circonstances où ils sont employés. C'est le seul moyen de pénétrer le génie de la langue anglaise ; car alors on est à même d'apprécier la différence qui existe entre les formes de cette langue et celles de sa langue maternelle, et ce sera un travail très-utile que de s'attacher à l'intelligence de chaque expression.

Nous allons indiquer celles qui se présentent les premières, et pour en augmenter facilement le nombre, il suffit de repasser toutes les pages apprises par cœur.

« Brought up a family. — Continued single. — to think
» of matrimony. — Find fault with it.—needles to attempt
» describing. — I made over to the orphans. — I valued
» myself upon being. — The pride of my heart. — To give
» up the dispute. — He was possessed of integrity. »

Non-seulement il faut apprendre les expressions, mais les tournures, les locutions, les phrases. Seulement il faut se souvenir que copier une phrase, c'est être plagiaire; tandis que l'imiter, c'est faire ce que tous les grands écrivains ont fait; et que copier une expression, une tournure sans le moindre changement, sans la plus légère altération, c'est faire son devoir, c'est obéir à la loi. Ainsi doit le faire l'élève toutes les fois qu'il parle dans les mêmes faits que ceux du livre.

Par ce travail, on est nécessairement conduit à reconnaître l'ordre des mots. C'est encore un signe qu'il faut apprendre, puisque cet ordre est également une convention.

Tout ce qui a été indiqué jusqu'à présent pour l'étude de l'anglais, peut donc se résumer en ces mots :

» Apprendre l'Epitome, le répéter toujours, et chercher à deviner le sens de tous les signes isolés et réunis, ainsi que l'ordre de ces signes, sans toutefois oublier que cet ordre est une convention.

LECTURES NOUVELLES

ET NARRÉS.

Maintenant l'esprit de l'élève est toujours actif; il tire parti de ce qu'il sait, en rapprochant par l'intelligence les divers élémens qui lui sont fournis par la mémoire, et une juste confiance en ses propres forces est le résultat le plus essentiel de ces premiers exercices.

Désormais, le but de tous ses travaux sera d'augmenter cette confiance par les nombreuses occasions qu'ils doivent lui fournir de reconnaître tout *ce qui lui est possible*, au moyen de son attention et des ressources qu'il possède.

C'est dans cette intention qu'on le fera parler; on ne saurait trop tôt le mettre en présence de cette difficulté; car une fois vaincue, il n'est plus rien qui doive l'arrêter. Comme transition, on lui demandera d'abord le simple narré de ce qu'il a appris par cœur; c'est-à-dire une espèce de commentaire un peu détaillé de chaque chapitre. Voici un exemple de la manière dont on peut concevoir cet exercice.

« The vicar of Wakefield had scarce taken orders a year,
» before he began to think seriously of matrimony, and
» chose a wife for her good qualities. He had an elegant
» house, situated in a fine country, and a good neighbour-
» hood. The year was spent in a moral or rural amusement
» in visiting his rich neighbours, and relieving such as
» were poor. »

» As he lived near the road, he often had the traveller

» or stranger visit him, and his cousins too, ever to the
» fortieth remove came very frequently to see him, and sit
» with him at the same table.

» They lived several years in a state of much happiness;
» not but that they sometimes had those little rubs which
» providence sends to enhance the value of its favors. But
» they soon got over the uneasiness, and usually in three
» or four days began to wonder how they vexed us.

» His children were at once well formed and healthy;
« his sons hardy and active, his daughters beautiful and
» blooming. He had six and considered them as a very va-
» luable present made to his country, and consequenly
» looked upon it as his debtor. A family likeness prevailed
» through all, and, properly speaking, they had but one
» character; that of being all equally generous, credulous,
» simple and inoffensive.

Ceci, comme je l'ai déjà dit, est une nouvelle manière de vérifier si l'élève a retenu ce qu'il a appris, et de s'assurer qu'il ne l'oubliera pas. On aurait tort, dans ces premiers essais, de tenir à une diction correcte, car l'élève plus tard la rectifiera de lui-même; l'important est de lui inspirer la confiance, sans laquelle toutes ses études seraient presque inutiles.

On pourrait également faire raconter par écrit, ce qui aurait aussi ses avantages pour l'orthographe et la connaissance des mots; mais l'exercice de la parole comprenant pour ainsi dire tous les autres, on ne saurait trop tôt y arriver, et c'est pour cela même que je conseille de le placer au début.

Chacun des chapitres appris par cœur donne nécessairement lieu au même travail indiqué sur le premier.

Ensuite on lit le reste du *Vicar of Wakefield* avec la traduction ; c'est l'ouvrage d'un mois. Observez que l'homme qui veut, avance beaucoup plus rapidement encore. Comme on l'a déjà dit, les phrases du *Vicar* sont expliquées par les phrases de la traduction, les mots par les phrases, et les syllabes par les mots. Si par hasard on rencontre une syllable qu'on n'ait pas encore vue, on fait connaissance ; on en regarde attentivement tous les traits ; on cherche à démêler les ressemblances et les différences, en la comparant aux signes dont on sait la valeur : le moindre rapprochement, l'idée la plus bizarre suffit en pareil cas pour graver cette syllable dans la mémoire. A dater de ce moment, on ne l'oubliera plus ; car on tient une note exacte de chaque acquisition, et la répétition de ce bordereau, s'ajoutant à la répétition journalière de l'*Epitome*, rien ne peut effacer du souvenir le radical dont ce petit trésor s'est enrichi.

Dès que l'élève comprend un chapitre, on le lui fait raconter. D'abord on ne raconte qu'une circonstance ; peu à peu les détails se présentent clairement, ce chaos se débrouille ; la lumière l'éclaire insensiblement, et on apprend de nouvelles expressions. Mais afin que l'intelligence soit active, de peur qu'elle ne prenne aucune part aux efforts de la mémoire, on exige de l'élève qu'il intervertisse l'ordre des faits, et qu'il fasse en parlant anglais, le parallèle de deux personnages ou de deux événements. Par exemple, qu'il dise son avis sur les réflexions de l'écrivain ; qu'il les combatte ; qu'il en établisse la solidité ; qu'il fasse enfin usage de la faculté qui lui a été donnée par la nature.

Ainsi chaque jour on récite l'*Epitome*, et on s'exerce à parler anglais. Par la répétition perpétuelle, et non interrompue, la mémoire s'enrichit de quelques alliances de mots, et l'on s'accoutume insensiblement aux formes de la langue nouvelle.

Voici un exemple de la manière de faire les rapprochements des chapitres. L'élève doit d'abord expliquer son intention pour que l'on connaisse le point de vue sous lequel il a envisagé les faits; puis, autant que possible, justifier ses phrases et le choix des expressions.

COMPARISON

OF THE TWO FIRST CHAPTERS.

The first chapter, is in general appointed for the description of the family of Wakefield. Their pleasures and pains, the different character of every person, all that is exposed in a few words; but sufficiently to let us know what may be their conduct, in great circumstances.

In the second one, we find a description more, of their manner of living, particularly that of Master Primrose, and his opinion: a subject, which is much more important since this opinion causes almost all his misfortunes.

In the first chapter then we know the characters, in the second how they are regulated, the history begins.

We must remark however in both thatthe circumstances are chose, the style is according to the intention; there is a sort of complaisance and satisfaction, when he speaks of his children; on the contrary a great composure when he tells us his principles and actions.

He describes in beginning his tastes, his wif'es qualities, and the system they followed to show what education he gave to his children : for the character is generally formed by education.

In the relation of the lost of his fortune, we always see the same principle as before virtuous and generous, such a misfortune did but increase his pride.

The portrait of his two girls is entirely done to prove how the qualities of the heart and virtue are better than the beauty of forms. His form proves too that the honest man never changes his opinion for interest; in general these two chapters are as the introduction to the rest of the history.

Tout en continuant ces exercices sur le *Vicaire*, on fait lire l'*Essai sur l'homme* et l'*extrait du Paradis perdu* avec la traduction :

A wake, my St John! leave all meaner things
To low ambition, and the pride of kings.
Let us (since Life can little more supply
Than just to look about us, and to die)
Expatiate free o'er all this scene of Man;
A mighty Maze! but not without a plan;
A wild, where weeds and flow'rs promiscuous shoot;
Or garden, tempting with forbidden fruit.

La plupart de ces mots sont dans le *Vicaire*, et quant à ceux qui ne s'y trouvent pas, on en devine le sens au moyen des autres et avec l'aide de la traduction. Dès qu'on entend, même à peu près, il faut se hâter d'aller à la fin pour recommencer sans cesse; c'est la *répétition*, et la seule *répétition* qui instruit à fond de tous les détails qu'on ne remarque pas d'abord.

Quand on est parvenu à comprendre les morceaux de poésie, on compose. On fait toutes les espèces de compositions, dont on a parlé dans la méthode pour apprendre la langue maternelle. Je les indiquerai de nouveau, en donnant des exemples de chacune d'elles; mais auparavant, je crois nécessaire d'expliquer le procédé à suivre pour la *vérification de la grammaire.* C'est un exercice qui n'a pas de place précise, et que l'on fera bien, toutefois, de commencer en même temps que les compositions.

VÉRIFICATION DE LA GRAMMAIRE.

Vérifier la grammaire, c'est la lire pour reconnaître qu'on l'a apprise, sans s'en douter. Le premier résultat de ce travail est d'apprendre la langue du grammairien, qui plus tard servira à l'élève à rédiger dans ce langage les observations grammaticales qu'il fera lui même.

Il lit donc attentivement les premières pages de la grammaire, qui se trouve dans son livre. Comme elles ne renferment que les termes de convention, c'est à la mémoire seule à les retenir, en les appliquant aux mots d'un certain nombre de phrases, qu'on analyse sous ce rapport. C'est donc une vérification que l'on propose à l'élève. Exemple :

» I was ever of opinion, that the honest man who mar-
» ried and brought up a large family, did more service than
» he who continued single, and only talked of population.

I, personal pronoun—singular—of the first person.

Was, first person — singular — imperfect tense of the verb *to be*.

Ever, an adverb.

Of, a preposition.

Opinion, a substantive or noun.

That, a conjunction.

The, a definite article.

Honest, an adjective.

Man, subst.

Who, a relative pronoun.

Married, the third person singular of the imperfect tense of the verb *to marry*.

And, a conj.

Brought, 3° person—sing—of the imp. tense of the verbe *bring*.

Up, prep.

A, Arti.

Large, adj.

Family, a substantive.

Did, 3^{d} pers. sing. of the imperfect tense of the verb *to do*.

More, adv.

Service, a subst.

Than, conjonct.

He, a personal pronoun of the third person.

Continued, 3^{d} pers. sing. of the imp. tense of the verb *to continue*.

Single, a subst.

And, conjunct.

Only, adv.

Talked, 3^d p. sing. of the imp. tense of the verb. *talk*.

Of, prep.

Population, a substant.

Et de même sur plusieurs phrases, en ayant soin de revenir assez souvent sur cet exercice pour que l'élève se rende familier l'usage de ces mots nouveaux.

Arrivé aux verbes, l'élève apprend par cœur les deux auxiliaires *to have* et *to be*, et l'exemple donné pour la conjugaison des verbes réguliers ; car qui sait conjuguer un verbe peut facilement conjuguer tous les autres. Je ne parle pas des verbes irréguliers dont le tableau est à part et qui doit être également appris par l'élève.

Voilà pour ce qui concerne l'étude des mots ; quant à celle de la syntaxe, c'est la même marche à suivre pour la lecture et la justification. J'aurais dû dire en commençant cet exercice que, dans le choix d'une grammaire, il fallait préférer celle écrite en anglais, que l'élève d'ailleurs comprendrait facilement au point de connaissances où il est parvenu.

Ainsi il se rendra compte, au moyen de l'*Epitome*, de toutes les observations des grammairiens.

Par exemple, il lit :

» A sentence is an assemblage of words, forming a com-
» plete sense. »

» Sentence are of two kinds, SIMPLE and COMPOUND. »

» A simple sentence has in it but one subject, and one finite verb, as, life is short. »

» A compound sentence consists of two or more simple
» sentences connected together: as, life is short, and art
» is long. Idleness produces want, vice, and misery. »

Après avoir reconnu que l'élève comprend bien la règle du grammairien, on lui fait chercher les divers passages du livre d'où il pourrait la tirer; comme : *We had no revolutions to fear, nor fatigues to undergo*; *all our adventures were by the fire-side, and all our migrations from the blue bed to the brown.*

On continue :

» A phrase is two or more words rightly put together,
» making sometimes part of a sentence, and sometimes a
» whole sentence. »

» The principal parts of a simple sentence are, the sub-
» ject, the attribute, and the object.

» The subject is the thing chiefly spoken of; the attribute
» is the thing or action affirmed or denied by it; and the
» object is the thing affected by such action. »

The nominative denotes the subject, and usually goes
» before the verb or attribute; and the word or phrase,
» deurting the object, follows the verb: as she could read
» any english book. Here, *she* is the subject; *could read*,
» the attribute, or thing affirmed; and *any english book*,
» the object.

» Syntax principally consists of two parts, concord and
» governmnt. »

» Concord is the agreement which one word has with
» another, in gender, number, case, or person.

» Government is that power which one part of speech
» has over another, in directing its mood, tense, or case. »

On continue de la même manière la lecture et la vérification de toutes les règles de la syntaxe, au nombre de vingt-deux.

On arrive ainsi aux parties intitulées *Prosody* et *Ponc-*

tuation, dont on justifie toutes les indications par les divers passages des livres que l'on connait.

Après plusieurs vérifications successives, l'élève sait assez la grammaire pour n'avoir plus besoin de s'en occuper d'une façon spéciale, son attention d'ailleurs, dans ses exercices journaliers, est nécessairement ramenée aux rapports grammaticaux.

Une nouvelle occasion se présentera encore de revenir sur ce sujet, c'est lorsqu'il s'agira d'étudier l'*homme grammairien.*

COMPOSITION. — Exercices de style.

Il s'agit maintenant d'écrire, c'est-à-dire d'exprimer en anglais ses pensées et ses sentiments sur un sujet quelconque. On a dû déjà soupçonner le moyen de parvenir à ce but dans les exercices qui ont été faits en parlant sur les matières de l'Épitome. Ainsi l'élève qui a tenté à plusieurs reprises de résumer les chapitres du *Vicaire* ou les parties suivantes a fait le premier pas dans l'étude du style ; car les résultats qu'il a obtenus en parlant lui seront plus faciles à obtenir par écrit. Effectivement, les résumés successifs qu'on exige de lui, l'obligent à renoncer aux phrases littérales du livre pour leur en substituer d'autres qui ne rendent que les faits principaux du chapitre, et conséquemment à faire usage de sa mémoire et de son intelligence. Bientôt disparaissent par la fréquence de cet exercice, les taches des mots mal employés et dont on ne se sert que pour arriver à

l'expression entière de la pensée ; bientôt se développent dans toute leur étendue les ressources de l'Epitome, qu'ainsi on apprend mieux de jour en jour : et si, d'ailleurs, il reste encore à reprendre à la correction, on a, du moins, acquis l'habitude des formes anglaises.

Cet exercice de *résumé* peut se faire de plusieurs manières ou d'abord sur un paragraphe, puis sur deux, puis trois, puis un chapitre, puis un volume, puis l'*Epitome entier.*

Ou bien, par une marche contraire, on résume d'abord un chapitre, puis on réduit ce résumé en un plus petit nombre de phrases; puis encore à quelques unes de moins, et successivement jusqu'à ce qu'on parvienne a une seule; laquelle peut aussi se rappeler par un mot.

Nous allons donner un exemple de ce travail selon ces deux manières.

Voici le premier parag. du premier chap. du *Vicar of Wakefield :*

» I was ever of opinion, that the honest man who mar-
» ried and brought up a large family, did more service
» than he who continued single, and only talked of popu-
» lation. From this motive, I had scarce taken orders a
» year, before I began to think seriously of matrimony,
» and chose wy wife as she dd her wedding gown, not for
» a fine glossy surface, but such qualities as would wear
» well. To do her justice, she was a good-natured notable
» woman; and as for breeding, there were feew conntry
» ladies who could show more. She could any English book
» without much spelling; but for pickling, preserving,
» and cookery, none could excel her. She prided herself,
» also, upon being an excellent contriver in house keeping;
» though I could never find that we grew richer with all
» her contrivances. »

L'élève peut résumer ainsi ce paragraphe, en faisant, bien entendu, la justification complète de sa phrase ; c'est-à-dire, en montrant qu'elle peut rappeler les faits ou les réflexions développés dans le paragraphe.

» The vicar says that after his opinion, he had scarce
» taken orders a year, when he began to think seriously of
» matrimony, and chose his wife for such qualities as would
» wear well. »

Ceci n'est qu'un exemple, et il va sans dire que chaque élève résume le paragraphe à sa guise ; et cette observation subsistera dans tous les modèles d'exercices qui seront donnés dans la suite.

Au premier paragraphe, on fait ajouter ce second :

» However, we loved each other tenderly, and our fon-
» dness increased as we grew old. There was, in fact, no-
» thing that could make us angry with the world or each
» other. We had an elegant house, situated in a fine coun-
» try, and a good neighbourhood. The year was spent in
» a moral or rural amusement; in visiting our rich neigh-
» bours, and relieving such as were poor. We had no re-
» volutions to fear, nor fatigues to undergo ; all our adven-
» tures were by the fire side, and all our migrations from
» the blue bed to the brown. »

On demande alors le résumé de ces deux paragraphes, ce que l'élève peut faire ainsi :

» The vicar says that, having thought seriously of ma-
» trimony, choses his wife for such qualities as would wear
» well, and lived thus in a state of much happiness. »

Il justifie cette phrase.

Ensuite on ajoute le troisième paragraphe, comme nous allons l'enseigner, pour mieux nous faire comprendre.

» As we lived near the road, we often had the traveller » or stranger visit us, to taste our gooseberry wine, for » which we had great reputation; and I profess, with the » veracity of an historian, that I never knew one of them » find fault with it. Our cousins too, even to the fortieth » remove all remembered their affinity, without any help » from the herald's office, and came very frequently to see » us. Some of them did us no great honor by these claims of » kindred; as we had the blind, the maimed, and the halt » amongst the number. However, my wife said always that, » as they were the same *flesh and blood*, they should sit » with us as the same table. So that if we had not very » rich, we generally had very happy friends about us; for » this remark will hold good through life, that the poorer » the guest, the better pleased he ever is with being » treated; and as some men gaze with admiration at the co- » lours of a tulip, or the wing of a butterfly, so I was by » nature an admirer of happy human faces. However, when » any of our relations was found to be a person of a very » bad character, a troublesome guest, or one we desired » to get rid of, upon his leaving my house I ever took care » to lend him a riding coat, or a pair of boots, or some- » times a horse of small value; and always had the satisfac- » tion of finding he never came back to return them. By » this the house was cleared of such as we did not like; but » never was the family of wakefield known to turn the tra- » veller or a poor dependant out of doors. »

Pour le résumé de ces trois paragraphes, l'élève peut le faire ainsi :

» The vicar had scarce taken orders a year, before he » began to think seriously of matrimony, and chose his » wife for such qualities as would wear well.—As they loved » each other tenderly, and had no revolutions to fear, they

» lived in a state of much happiness. They had generally
» very happy friends about them, and the vicar took care
» to clear the house of such as he not like. »

Cela suffit pour montrer comment on parviendrait à résumer tout le chapitre; et on voit en même temps qu'il y aurait encore possibilité de réduire ces dernières analyses à une seule phrase, et par suite à un seul mot. Nous aurons plus tard l'occasion de donner des exemples de cette dernière espèce de réduction.

Occupons-nous, pour le moment, de l'autre mode de *résumé*; il consiste à envisager d'abord l'ensemble pour parvenir au moyen de réductions successives à une phrase ou à un mot. Le fait même de cet exercice ne laissera, d'ailleurs, aucun doute sur la manière de le pratiquer.

On demande donc à l'élève l'analyse écrite du premier chapitre, dans laquelle il doit d'abord conserver, autant qu'il le pourra, l'ordre des faits principaux et les réflexions qui s'y rattachent. Alors il présentera un travail analogue au suivant :

» From the opinion, that the honest man who married
» and brought up a large family, did more service than he
» who continued single, and only talked of population, the
» vicar of wakefield, had scarce taken orders a year, before
» he began to think seriously of matrimony and chose his
» wife a good-natured notable wooman. She could read
» without much spelling; but in housekeeping none could
» excel her.

» As the vicar had an elegant house, a good neighbour-
» hood, very happy friends about him, he lieved several
» years in a state of much happiness, because he soon got
» over the uneasiness caused by the little rubs wich provi-
» dence sends to enhance the value of its favors.

» He had four sons hardy and active, and two daughters
» beautiful and blooming, who caused his exultation and
» the vanity and satisfaction of his wife.

» He describes the particular characters of his two daughters, Olivia and Sophia; the one entertained him with
» her vivacity when he was gay, the other with her sense
» when he was serious. George his eldest son, intended for
» one of the learned professions, was bred at Oxford, his
» second boy, Moses, whom he designed for business, received a sort of miscellaneous education at home

Ensuite on demande une seconde analyse plus courte, comme celle-ci, par exemple :

» The vicar had scarce taken orders a year, before he began to think seriously of matrimony. His wife was a good-
» natured notable woman, who she prided herself upon
» being an excellent contriver in housekerping.

» They lived each other several years in a state of much
» happiness, with very happy friends about them.

» The vicar had six children, two daughters and four
» sons. The eldest boy was bred at Oxford, the second, re-
» ceiveda sort of miscellaneous education at home.

Enfin, on demande un dernier résumé qu'on peut renfermer dans deux ou trois phrases, ou même dans une seule.

» The vicar describes the motive of his matrimony, the
» choice of his wife, and their happiness for several years.
» He mentions his exultation, and the vanity and satisfaction
» of his wife, when they stood in the midst of their six
» children.

GÉNÉRALISATIONS.

Généraliser, c'est indiquer la pensée principale d'un paragraphe, d'un chapitre, d'un volume, d'un ouvrage entier : on désigne cette pensée par une phrase ou par un mot qui comprenne tout le paragraphe ou tout le chapitre généralisé.

Donnons d'abord un exemple de la généralisation par paragraphe ; voici le travail d'un élève sur le premier chapitre.

1er paragraphe. « Heart's qualities are more precious than » exterious qualities. »

2° parag. « Sage and peaceful man a lways knows how » enjoy of his position in life. »

3e parag. « Hospicious man who loads poors with goods, » knows also be severe with those who have rendered the- » meselves unworthy of his liberalities. »

4e parag. « Virtuous man, raises his soul over rubs which » he feels. »

5e parag. « Richess do not man's happiness. »

6e parag. « We are not always free of acting according » to our will. »

7e parag. « Nothing is more seducing than virtue. »

8e parag. « Every one likes what is brought nearer of his » character. »

Et chacune de ces phrases peut se réduire elle-même à un mot, que l'élève doit *justifier*. Par justifier nous entendons toujours trouver dans le livre la preuve de ce qu'on avance.

Ainsi l'élève montrera que sa réflexion sur l'*homme hospitalier* sort exactement des faits du premier paragraphe, et de même pour toutes ses autres généralisations.

EXERCICES DE RAPPORT.

Découvrir des rapports, voilà l'un des exercices les plus féconds, les plus utiles de la méthode qui proclame que *tout est dans tout*. Les rapports sont de deux espèces : rapports de contraste, rapports d'analogie.

Ainsi le 2e et le 3e paragraphe ont ensemble un rapport d'analogie, attendu que dans l'un le ministre développe la manière dont il savait jouir du bonheur qu'il a indiqué dans l'autre. Dans chacun de ces paragraphes, il y a un rapport de contraste dans le différent accueil que fait le ministre à ses parents, selon la différence de leurs caractères.

Si l'on compare le premier et le second chapitre, on reconnaîtra un rapport de contraste dans le bonheur et le malheur de la famille de Wakefield; et ces deux chapitres ont ensemble un rapport d'analogie par l'égalité d'ame que le ministre sait conserver dans ces deux états.

Cet exercice devra être fréquemment répété sur toutes les parties de l'*Epitome*, et toujours avoir lieu en anglais.

C'est ainsi que, non seulement le premier chapitre, mais tous les chapitres du *Vicaire* pourront se rapporter à ces mots qui commencent le second paragraphe de l'ouvrage :

» However we loved each other tenderly, and our fond-
» ness increased as we grew old. » — « Nous nous aimions
» tendrement, et notre affection s'accrut avec les années.»

Il en est de même de ces mots contenus dans le même paragraphe : *Fondness*, *angry with the world*, *elegant house*, *fine country*, *good neighbourhood*, *moral or rural amusement*, *revolutions*, *fatigues*, *adventures*, *fire-side*, *poors*, *migrations.*

On exercera l'élève à tout rapporter à ces mots, tantôt un paragraphe, tantôt un chapitre entier. C'est ainsi que chacune des pensées de son Epitome réveillera dans son esprit le souvenir de toutes les autres, et les pensées amèneront les mots; car c'est revêtue de formes anglaises que devra nécessairement se présenter à lui toute pensée que son Epitome anglais lui aura suggérée.

EXERCICES DE SYNTHÈSE OU COMPOSITIONS.

Par la synthèse, on refait un tout analogue à celui que l'on connaît. Cet exercice n'est autre chose que la composition qui se subdivise en plusieurs parties distinctes, dont successivement nous exposerons les principales.

On peut d'abord proposer des *Imitations* des paragraphes du livre; cet exercice sert à prendre l'habitude d'employer les expressions anglaises dans leurs véritables acceptions.

Supposons que l'on prenne pour l'objet d'imitation le paragraphe du livre où la fille aînée du vicaire est enlevée à sa famille, (chapitre XVIII); l'élève remet la composition suivante :

» It would be endless to describe what the young lovers
» appeared to endure when M. Wilmot was determined

» to break off the match. Such sincerity as miss Wilmot » was possest of! cried George, when he saw she was gone. » O what will poor George do! I shall never enjoy one » hour more! thus to rob me of my mistress on the day be- » fore that appointed for the nuptials, etc. »

L'élève commence par donner en français la traduction de cette composition (nous supposons que le maître ne sache pas l'anglais). Il en explique chaque phrase, chaque expression, chaque mot. Cette justification donne lieu à une sorte de colloque, dont on peut avoir une véritable idée par l'ensemble des demandes et des réponses suivantes :

Le maître : Pourquoi dites-vous que M. Wilmot se résolut de rompre l'alliance projetée entre sa fille et le fils du vicaire ?

L'élève : C'est un fait du livre.

Le maître : Pourquoi dites-vous *on the day before ?*

L'élève : C'est encore un fait de l'histoire du vicaire ; et l'auteur employe la même expression.

Le maître : L'expression, *thus to rob me of,* est-elle dans le vicaire ?

L'élève : Dans l'endroit où M. Primrose parle de sa fille chérie.

Le maître : Est-ce le même sentiment ?

L'élève : Oui, car le vicaire et son fils ont perdu, tous les deux, l'objet de leur tendresse.

Le nombre et la nature des questions à faire dépend du maître ; l'élève doit y répondre toujours d'après les faits de son livre ; on ne doit point lui permettre de justifier ses réflexions ni les expressions dont il s'est servi pour les présenter, par des faits étrangers à son Épitome et par des

expressions prises ailleurs; autrement il finirait par divaguer. Une réflexion, quelque juste qu'elle soit, doit être rejetée comme mauvaise, si l'élève ne *montre* dans son livre, le *fait* qui en est la base; il en est de même pour les expressions. Ce n'est que lorsqu'il est très fort qu'il peut prendre cette liberté et se dispenser de *montrer* dans son livre le *fait* qui lui a suggéré une réflexion et *l'expression* dont l'écrivain se sert pour la rendre.

Comme cette vérification est très importante, et qu'elle doit être employée dans toutes les espèces de composition, nous allons en présenter un nouvel exemple par le récit d'une leçon donnée à un anglais par un maître qui ne sait pas l'anglais.

l'Anglais : Monsieur, je suis anglais.

Le maître : Bien! voulez-vous apprendre l'anglais?

l'A. Monsieur, je sais l'anglais.

Le m. D'après la méthode, non monsieur, à moins que vous ne soyez un des grands écrivains de la Grande-Bretagne.

l'A. Oh! non, monsieur.

Le m. Eh bien! me demandez-vous une leçon d'anglais pour l'émancipation intellectuelle?

l'A. Oui, monsieur.

Le m. Très bien! voilà le vicaire de Wakefield en anglais, lisez un paragraphe quelconque et écrivez ce que vous pensez d'après cette lecture.

l'A. J'ai écrit mes réflexions.

Le m. Lisez... trop vite; le premier mot. Bon, est-ce anglais?

l'A. Certainement, monsieur.

Le m. Montrez.

l'A. Comment! montrez!

Le m. Oui, montrez-moi ce mot dans le livre.

l'A. Oh! oui! le voilà.

Le m. Très bien! pourriez-vous me montrer tous les mots dans le livre?

l'A. Oui; sans doute.

Le m. C'est très bien. Vous avez écrit de l'anglais, mais voyons si c'est écrit comme les grands écrivains, lisez... pas si vite; la premiere phrase. Bon! qu'est-ce que cela signifie?

l'A. Je parle du bonheur domestique et je dis qu'il vient du calme.

Le m. Pourquoi?

l'A. Le vicaire dit qu'il était heureux parce qu'il n'avait pas de révolutions à craindre.

Le m. C'est très bien; pourriez-vous justifier ainsi toutes vos pensées?

l'A. Oh! non.

Le m. Effacez celles qui ne sont pas tirées d'un fait.

l'A. Oh! oui, je comprends.

Le m. (*Vient du calme*), comment dites-vous cela en anglais?.... Cette association de mots anglais, cette expression est-elle employée par Goldsmith?

l'A. Je crois que oui.

Le m. Montrez.

l'A. Oh! je ne peux pas; mais je comprends, oui! je comprends. Il faudrait toujours employer les expressions comme un grand écrivain.

Le m. Sans doute et dans les mêmes circonstances, savez-vous l'anglais?

l'A. Oh! non.

Le m. Non! pas plus que les Français ne savent le français Me comprenez-vous ?

l'A. Oh ! oui ! oui ! je comprends.

Telle est la marche ordinaire que l'élève doit suivre pour rendre compte de son travail, dans toute espèce de composition. Rien de plus aisé que d'en trouver les sujets ; car il suffit de lire un paragraphe quelconque pour le réduire à un mot, qui devient alors pour l'élève la représentation de tous les faits envisagés sous ce point de vue particulier. On aura encore plus de facilités sous ce rapport, si au lieu de se borner au paragraphe, on veut prendre ses sujets dans des chapitres entiers.—Enfin, quand on veut écrire des réflexions sur un vice, une vertu, une qualité ou un défaut, on peut choisir dans tout le livre les passages où se trouvent des faits à l'appui du sujet qu'on veut traiter.

Donnons, en premier lieu, un exemple de ceux qu'on tire des paragraphes, en indiquant un moyen bien simple de prévenir toute hésitation de la part du maître dans le choix du paragraphe.—Pour cela, on fait lire à l'élève le paragraphe qui se présente à l'ouverture du livre. Interrogé sur ce qu'il en pense, il répond d'après ce qu'il a vu et on lui dira alors de développer par écrit et d'après les faits contenus dans le paragraphe qu'il vient de lire, les raisons de la réponse qu'il a faite.

Par exemple : l'élève ouvre au hasard le vicaire de Wakefield et lit le paragraphe qui commence par ces mots : *It was managed with proper spirit on both sides*, etc., et qui finit par ceux-ci : *nor will I allow him now to be a husband either de* JURE, DE FACTO, *or in any sense of the expression.* Après la lecture, le maître lui demande ce qu'il pense de ce paragraphe ; et si l'élève répond (je suppose) que le vicaire

est un homme consciencieux, on lui donne alors la *Conscience* pour sujet de composition, en le renfermant dans le paragraphe qui vient d'être lu.

Voici la composition :

CONSCIENCE.

« The conscientious man, sooner than doing any thing » against his conscience, prefers exposing himself to the » greatest misfortunes. »

» He prefers not only sacrificing his own interests but » still those which are most dear to him in the world; and » even the dreadful position in which he is placed, added to » approaching poverty, will not prevail upon him to dis- » guise the realt ruth. A man of conscience becomes strong » when adversity attains him. Etc. »

Le maître : Pourquoi dites-vous que l'homme consciencieux sacrifie à la vérité, non-seulement son intérêt propre, mais encore celui de ce qu'il a de plus cher au monde?

L'élève : Le vicaire, venant de recevoir la nouvelle de la perte de sa fortune, et sollicité par le parent qui lui annonce ce malheur, de ménager les opinions de M. Wilmot, futur beau-père de Georges, son fils aîné, afin de conclure un mariage avantageux, dans lequel il trouverait des ressources dans son malheur, refuse de céder à ces sollicitations. La crainte de blesser la vérité l'emporta sur son amour pour son fils que la rupture de ce mariage va plonger dans le désespoir.

Le maître : Où avez-vous vu que le malheur rend toute son énergie à l'homme dont la conscience est pure?

L'élève : Le vicaire dit : je rétracte toutes les concessions que j'avais faites par politesse à mon adversaire, et je soutiens, etc.

Supposons maintenant que l'élève veuille écrire sur le *Bonheur*, d'après les faits du quatrième chapitre ; voici sa composition qu'il faut toujours moins envisager sous le rapport de la perfection que sous celui de la marche à suivre en pareil cas.

Happiness.

« Happiness is generally found in ourselves, and not » as many think in the gifts of fortune; persuasion of » divine approbation and support is one of the most va- » luable causes of happy life, in giving us tranquillity of » the heart. A wise man is able to find happiness in » whatever condition in which fortune places him, because » the little misfortunes which happen in this world, he » looks upon as mortifications which each man is obliged » to pay in his life, and truly a great proportion of human » evils is created by ourselves ; our nature being impatient » and unable of any moderation. We must therefore in » order to make us happy, look for this state, not in the » fortune, for it is frail ; not in the things of the world, » for they could expose us to unexpected misfortunes, but » within ourselves, in our temper, and in heart. »

L'élève justifie ses réflexions.

Happiness resides generally in ourselves ; d'après le bonheur dont jouissait la famille du vicaire, lorsqu'elle a été déchue de sa première prospérité.

And no as many think in a great fortune ; la famille du

vicaire se désolait d'abord de la perte de sa fortune, et elle pensait si fortement que le bonheur consistait dans la richesse, que dans son malheur elle voulait encore briller. La suite la fit changer de sentiment.

Persuasion of divine approbation, etc. Le vicaire trouvait un contentement inexprimable à remplir ses devoirs envers Dieu et envers les hommes. *Je distribuais le reste de mon revenu aux pauvres et aux orphelins* : telles sont ses paroles.

A wise mau is able to find happiness, etc. Le vicaire, dont le caractère était plein de sagesse, est parvenu à procurer le bonheur à lui-même et à sa famille, comme on le voit par ces paroles : *Nous commençâmes à trouver qu'il n'est point de situation si misérable*, etc.

Because the little mortifications which happen in this world, etc. Lorsque le vicaire eût été deux fois la dupe de friponneries, quoique ces vols diminuassent de beaucoup sa petite fortune, il conservait sa joie et sa bonne humeur, tandis que sa femme se désolait.

Et de même jusqu'à la fin. On s'occupe ensuite du style qu'on fait justifier, comme on l'a vu plus haut.

AUTRE COMPOSITION.

CURIOSITY.

« The desire of knowing every thing is called curiosity.
» Sometimes it has a good effect in contributing to our
» instruction ; but in other circumstances it is a great im-

» perfection, and it can make a man wrecked for life, by
» the faults which follow it; and indeed the curious man is
» unhappy in refusing to yeld to the counsels of others,
» in order to follow his passion.

» Sometimes curiosity seemes not important, but it can
» have a very bad effect, or make us troublesome with all
» the others. »

La justification des réflexions et du style doit se faire comme précédemment.

On peut demander aussi la justification en anglais comme on le verra dans la composition suivante:

INGRATITUDE.

This vice derives its source from a cold and heardened heart incapable of the softer feelings and indifferent to any kindness; wherein its immediate gratification is not to be found, but even this momentary sensibility passes, as soon as it obtains the end at which it aims; and all idea of desire of repassing the benefits they have received is syon consigned to oblivion by the ungrateful who would return treachery and even cruelty for the greatest sacrifices never considering what a sting such conduct must be to those who have been thus favourable to their wishes.

Cette composition est justifiée par un seul fait.

D. Pourquoi dites-vous : This vice derives its source from a cold and heardened heart.

R. Because M. Thornill was ungrateful to Olivia and his heart was cold and heardened.

D. Pourquoi : Incapable of the softer feelings.

R. Because M. Thornill was harsh and inconsiderate.

D. Pourquoi : Indifferent to any kindness wheein its personal gratification is not to be found.

R. M. Thornill was at first sensible of the sacrifices he made for him but it was only for a moment. Etc., etc.

SYNONYMES.

On fait des synonymes ; c'est-à-dire on tire du rapprochement des faits les nuances diverses de signification des mots que l'on compare. — On pourra, pour plus amples détails, consulter le *Cours pratique de langue française*, mais on se mettra facilement au courant de cet exercice par les exemples ci-dessous.

Answer, Reply.

« The *answer* is made to a demand or a question asked;
» the *reply*, to an answer or a remontrance. Academies are
» taught first to start difficulties, and then to *answer* them.
» It is nobler to hear a wise remonstrance and profit by it,
» than make any *reply*. The word *answer* is more extensive
» in its signification than *reply*; whe *answer* the questions of
» those who ask us ; the demands of such as expect our servi-
» ces; the examination of counsel; the arguments of dis-
» putants; the letters we receive; and for all our conduct.
» The word *reply* is fare more limited; it supposes a dis-
» pute commenced from difference of sentiment; we *reply*
» to the answer of an author whose works we have critici-
» sed; to the reprimand of those whose correction we are
» unwilling to submit us; to the pleaders; to an answer in

» chancery. Ap *answer* should be clear, precise, and dictated
» by reason and good sense; a *reply* strong and convincing,
» armed with truth, and strengthend by experience : we
» should teach children as much as possible to give short
» and judicious *answers*; and convince them that there is
» more honour in listening, than in making *replies* to those
» who have the goodness to instruct them. »

AUTRE SYNONYME.

To Study, to Learn.

« *To Study*, implies an uniform application, in search
» of knowledge; *to learn,* implies that application with suc-
» cess. We *study* to *learn;* and *learn* by dint of study. We
» can *study* but one thing at a time; but we may *learn*
» many. The more we *learn* the more we know; but often
» times, the more we *study* the less we know. We have
» *studied* well, when we have *learned* to doubt. There are
» many things we *learn* withont *study;* and other things
» we *study* without *learning.* Those are not the wisest who
» have *studied* most; but these who have *learned* most. We
» see some persons *studying* continually without *learning*
» any thing; and others, *learning* almost very thing without
» the least *study.* The time of your youth is the time of
» *study;* but it is in a more advanced age, when we truly
» can be said to *learn*; it is then only, we have capacity
» to digest, what we have before laid up in the memory. »

AUTRE.

WITH, BY.

« Both these particles express the connection between » some instrument, or means of effecting an end, and » the agent who employs it; but *with*, expresses a more » close and immediate connection; *by*, a more remote one. » We kill a man with a sword, he dies by violence. The » criminal is bound *with* ropes *by* the executioner. The » proper distinction in the use of these particles, is ele- » gantly marked in a passage of Dr. Robertson's History of » Scotland. When one of the old scottish Kings was ma- » king an enquiry into the tenture *by* which his nobles » held their lands, they started up, and drew their swords; » *By* these, said they, we acquired our lands, and with » these, we will defend them. *By* these we acquired our » lands, signifies the more remote means of acquisition by » force and martial deeds; and, *with* these we will defend » them; signifies the immediate direct instrument, the » sword, which they would employ in their defense. »

Les pensées et le style de ces synonymes doivent être justifiés de la manière indiquée, et on voit combien il est facile de trouver de semblables rapprochements de mots.

SYNONYMES DE PENSÉES OU D'EXPRESSIONS.

« Chaque langue a son génie, c'est-à-dire, chaque peu- » ple a ses habitudes. Je ne parle pas des mots : ce sont » évidemment des conventions arbitraires dans l'origine; » quant aux expressions, c'est l'intelligence qui les a créées. » Mais, quoique tous les hommes aient une égale intelli-

» gence, il nous est impossible de deviner quelles sont les » expressions reçues chez tel ou tel peuple. Je puis bien, » comme homme, avoir l'idée de comparer une chose qui » produit beaucoup de maux avec une source, et employer » l'expression, *source de maux;* mais il m'est impossible » de deviner si les Chinois, par exemple, ont adopté cette » comparaison. Si je réunis les deux mots *source* et *maux* » dans la langue des Mandarins, les Chinois se moqueront » peut-être de moi, parce que je n'ai pas parlé dans le sens » de leur langue. J'ai fait *de l'esprit d'homme*, mais je n'ai » pas fait de *l'esprit de Chinois ;* et il n'y a que celui-là qui » ait cours à Pékin.

» Il résulte de là que l'homme qui veut parler une langue » déterminée doit renoncer aux trois quarts de son esprit » pour apprendre l'esprit français ou l'esprit anglais. L'es- » prit ue s'apprend pas; mais l'esprit français ou anglais » s'apprend. »

(*J. Jacotot. Lang. mat.*)

Ainsi, pour être à même de comprendre et de rapprocher les expressions, il faut se représenter la succession de faits, l'ensemble de circonstances, le tableau que chacune d'elles indique ; et si on se rappelle toutes les circonstances où on les a vues, on s'en servira dans les mêmes circonstances et pour des faits analogues, et conséquemment, on aura les moyens de faire ressortir les nuances qui existent entre elles, c'est-à-dire les ressemblances et les différences.

Exemple :

It is frutiless, it is needless,

It is useless, it is endless.

These four expressions are remarquable by the crumb, *less* that completes them, and that adds to their proper sense, the idea of negation.

It is fruitless recalls to our mind, a sequel of efforts repeated, but without a success.

It is needless, usually is but th' expression of a man who sees no necessity to make his efforts for the execution of a design that has no end.

It is useless makes us suppose nor advantages, nor disagreements in a thing.

At length, and differently to the others, the expression, *it is endless* is generally employed in the figurative sense, now, giving the idea of much different sensations, now, and more often being a form of style.

It is *fruitless* to row, on the sea, with a dead calm, as it would be *needless* to employ oars, when the winds are fair.

It is *useless*, and *endless* for man to attempt knowing the course of all the stars of the world, of which he still does not know the number.

Il est inutile de répéter désormais que toutes les parties des compositions des élèves doivent être entièrement justifiées, comme on l'a fait voir sur plusieurs exemples. Cette espèce de compte rendu est donc une condition essentielle à toute composition, et qu'on ne saurait négliger sans nuire d'une manière sensible aux progrès de l'élève. Il faut que celui-ci ne transige jamais avec l'habitude de voir ce qu'il dit, et qu'il s'accoutume à faire sortir toutes les réflexions qu'il pourra du petit cercle de faits dans lequel on le renferme à dessein.

Nous allons continuer à exposer des exemples de toutes les compositions qu'on peut proposer aux élèves, et dont les sujets sont tirés de leur *Epitome*, ou des autres ouvrages qu'ils ont entre les mains.

PORTRAITS ET CARACTÈRES.

Mary Queen of Scots.

« To all the charms of beauty, and the utmost elegance » of external form, Mary added those accomplishments » which render their impression irresistible. Polite, affa- » ble, insinuating, sprightly, and capable of speaking and » writing with equal ease and dignity. Sudden, however, » and violent in all her attachments, because her heart was » waren and unsuspicius. Impatient of contradiction, » because she had been accustomed from her infancy to be » treated as a queen. No stranger, on some occasions, to » dissimulation, which, in that perfidious court where she » received her education, was reckoned among the neces- » sary arts of government. Not insensible to flattery, or » unconscious of that pleasure with which almost every » woman beholds the influence of her own beauty. For- » med with the qualities that we love, not with the talents » that we admire. She was an agreeable woman rather » than an illustrious queen. The vivacity of her spirit, not » sufficiently tempered with sound judgment, and the » warmth of her heart, which was not at all times under » the restraint of discretion, betrayed her both into errors » and crimes. To say that she was most unfortunate, will » not account for that long and almost uninterrupted suc- » cession of calamities which befel her; we must like- » wise add, that she was often imprudent. Humanity will » draw a veil over the part of her character which it can- » not approve, and may, perhaps, prompt some to impute

» her actions to her situation, more than to her disposition.
» Mary's sufferings exceed, both in degree and duration,
» the tragical distresses which fancy has feigned to excite
» sorrow and commiseration; and while we survey them,
» we are apt altogether to forget her frailties; we think
» of her faults with less indignation, and approve of our
» tears, as if they were shed for a person who had attained
» much nearer to pure virtue. »

On pourra proposer comme sujets de portraits, celui du vicaire, de sa femme, de M. Burchell, ou de tout autre personnage qui n'est dépeint dans l'ouvrage que par ses actes.

LETTRES.

James Earl of Derby, to Commissary general Ireton, *in answer to the summons sent the Earl to deliver up the Isle of Man.*

Sir,

» I have received your letter with indignation, and with
« scorn retuen you with this answer: That I cannot but
» wonder whence you should gather any hopes that I should
» prove, like you, treacherous to my sovereign, since you
» cannot be ignorant of the manifest candor of my former
» actings in his late Majesty's service, from which princi-
» ples of loyalty I am no whit departed. I scorn your
» proffer; I disdain your favor; I abhor your treason; and
» am so far from delivering up this island to your advan-
» tage, that I shall keep it to the utmost of my power,
» and I hope, to your destruction. Take this for your final
» answer, and forbear any further solicitation; for if you
» trouble me with any more messages of this nature, I will
» burn your paper and hang up your messenger. This is

» the immutable resolution, and shall be the undoubted
» practice of him who accounts it his chiefest glory to be
» his Majesty's most loyal and obedient subject. »

AUTRE LETTRE.

Letter from Mr. Thornill to his uncle sir William Thornill.

Sir,

I trest you are not disposed to credit the vile assertions of a man who basely accuses me, as being the author of his daughter's ruin; hoping by that means to interest you in his favonr. As being the victim of another's guilt, and thus to clear himself of the debts he has untracted with my agents; but I feel certain you will be shortly convinced, how little my conduct has been deserving of blame; indeed could Iever have acted in such a manner after the continual good advice and example I have alaways found you ready to giveme. Iown Imight been more generous, but my resentment and contempt were so strongly excited by his base attempts to lower me in your esteem, Ithat sorelved to let justice follow its own course. However, at your desire I will forgive him every offence and endeavour to restore him to his former situation as I hope this will find you inclined to indulgence with regard to

Your dutiful nephew;

Thornill.

NARRATIONS.

On donne à faire des récits.

Valentine and Unnion.

« At the siege of Namur by the allies, there were in the
» ranks of the company commanded by captain Pincent,
» in colonel Frederik Hamilton's regiment, one Unnion
» a corporal, and one Valentine a private centinel: there
» happened between these two men a dispute about an af-
» fair of love, which, upon some aggravation, grew to
» an irreconciliable hatred. Unnion being the officer of Va-
» lentine, took all opportunities even to strike his rival,
» and profess the spite and revenge which moved him to
» it. The centinel bore it without resistance; but frequently
» said, he would die to be revenged of that tyrant. They
» had spent whole months in this manner, the one injuring,
» the other complaining; when in the midst of their rage
» towards each other, they were commanded upon the at-
» tack of the castle, where the corporal received a shot in
» the thigh, and fell; the French pressing on, and he
» expecting to be trampled to death, called out to his ene-
» my: « Ah Valentine! can you leave me here? » Valen-
» tine immediately ran back, and in the midst of a thick fire
» of the French, took the corporal upon his back, and
» brought him through all that danger as far as the abbey
» of Salsine, when a cannon ball took off his head: his
» body fell under his enemy whom he was carrying off.
» Unnion immediately forgot his wound, rose up, tearing
» his hair, and then threw himself upon the bleeding car-
» case, crying: « Ah, Valentine! was it for me, who have
» so barbarously used thee, that thou hast died? I will not

» live after thee. » He was not by any means to be forced » from the body, but was removed with it bleeding in his » arms, and attended with tears by all their comrades who » knew their enmity. When he was brought to a tent, his » wounds were dressed by force: but the next day, still » calling upon Valentine, and lamenting his cruelties to » him, he died in the pangs of remorse. »

TABLEAUX.

On propose des sujets de Tableaux.

Mountain Scenery.

« But hehold! through a vast tract of sky before us, the » mighty Atlas rears his lofty head, covered with snow, » above the clouds. Beneath the mountain's foot, the » rocky country rises into hills, a proper basis of the pon- « derous mass above; where huge embodied rocks lie piled » on one another, and seem to prop the high arch of hea- » ven. — See with what trembling steps poor mankind » tread the narrow brink of the deep precipices! Whence, » with giddy horror, they look down, mistrusting even » the ground which bears them; while they hear the « hollow sound of torrents underneath, and see the ruin » of the empending rock, with falling trees, which hang » with their roots upwards, and seem to draw more ruin » after them. Here thoughtless men, seized with the » newness of such objects, become thoughtful, and willin- » gly contemplate the incessant changes of his earth's sur- »face. They see, as in one instant, the revolutions of pay » ages, the fleeting forms of things, and the decay even to » this our globe, whose youth and first formation thef

» consider, while the apparent spoil and irreparable brea-
» ches of the wasted mountain show them the world itself
» only as a noble ruin, and make them think of its ap-
» proaching period. — But here, midway the mountain,
» a spacious border of thick wood harbours our wearied
» travellers, who now are come among the ever green and
» lofty pines, the firs, and noble cedars, whose towering
» heads seem endless, the rest of the trees appearing only as
» shrubs beside them. And here a different horror seizes
» our sheltered travellers, when they see the day dimini-
» shed by the deep shades of the vast wood, which, closing
» thick above, spreads darkness and eternal night below.
» The faint and gloomy light looks horrid as the shade
» itself : And the profound stillness of these places im-
» poses silence upon men, struck with the hoarse echoings
» of every sound within the spacious caverns of the
» wood. Here space astonishes. Silence itself seems
» pregnant; while an unknown force works on the mind,
» and dubious objects move the wakeful sense. Mysterious
» voices are either heard or fancied; and various forms
» of Deity seem to present themselves, and appear more
» manifest in the sacred sylvan scenes; such as of old gave
» rise to temples, and favoured the religion of the ancient
» world. Even we ourselves, who in plain character may
» read Divinity from so many bright parts of earth, choose
» rather these obscure places, to spell out that mysterious
» Being, which to our weak eyes appears at best under a
» veil of cloud. »

DÉFINITIONS.

HISTORY.

« At the same time, it is not every record of facts, however

» true, that is entitled to the name to history; but such a » record as enables us to apply the transactions of former » ages for our own instruction. The facts ought to be mo» mentous and important; represented in connection with » their causes; traced to their effects; and unfolded in clear » and distinct order. For wisdom is the great end of his» tory. It is designed to supply the want of experience. » Though it enforce not its instructions with the same autho» rity, yet it furnishes us with a greater variety of instruc» tions than it is possible for experience to afford in the course » of the longest life. Its object is, to enlarge our views of the » human character, and to give full exercice to our judgment » on human affairs. It must not therefore be a tale, calculated » to please only, and addressed to the fancy. Gravity and » dignity are essential characteristics of history; no light » ornaments are to be employed, no flippancy of style, no » quaintness of wit. But the writer must sustain the cha» racter of a wise man, writing for the instruction of pos» terity; one who has studied to inform himself well, who has » pondered his subject with care, and who addresses himself » to our judgment rather than to our imagination. Not that » it is inconsistent with ornamented and spirited narration. » History admits of much high ornament and elegance; but » the ornaments must be always consistent with dignity; » they should not appear to be sought after; but to rise na» turally from a mind animated by the events which it » records. »

FABLES ET ALLÉGORIES.

The Beggar and his Dog.

« A beggar and his dog sat at the gate of a noble cour-

» tier, and were preparing to make a meal on a bowl of » fragments from the kitchen-maid. A poor dependant of » his lordship's, who had been sharing the singular favour » of a dinner at the steward's table, was struck with the » appearance, and stopped a little to observe them. The « beggar, hungry and voracious as any courtier in chris- » tendom, seized with greediness the choicest morsels, and » swallowed them himself; the residue was divided into » portions for his children. A scrag was thrust into one » pocket for honest Jack, a crust into another for bashful » Tom, and a luncheon of cheese was wrapt up with care » for the little favourite of his hopeful family. In short, if » any thing was thrown to the dog, it was a bone so clo- » sely picked, that it scarce afforded a pittance to keep life » and soul together.

» How exactly alike, said the dependant, is this poor » dog's case and mine! He is watching for a dinner from « a master who cannot spare it; I for a place from a needy » lord, whose wants perhaps are greater than my own; » and whose relations are more clamorous than any of this » beggar's brats. »

» Shrewdly was it said by an ingenious writer, *a cour-* » *tier's dependant is a beggar's dog.* »

PHILOSOPHIE MORALE ET PRATIQUE.

The Nettle and the Rose.

» We may consider human life as a garden, in which » roses and nettles are promiscuously scattered, and in » which we often feel the sting of the wounding nettle,

» while we enjoy the fragrance of the blooming rose. Those » bowers of delight, entwined with the woodbine and » jessamine, under whose friendly umbrage we seek shel- » ter from the noon-day sun, frequently are the abode » of snakes, adders, and venomous creatures, which » wound us in these unguarded scenes of delight.

» As the year has its seasons, and winter and summer » are constantly in pursuit of each other; so changeable » likewise is the condition of mortals; and as the elements « are frequently disturbed by storms, hurricanes, and tem- » pests, so is the human mind frequently ruffled and in- » disposed, till the sun-shine of reason and philosophy » bursts forth, and dispels the gloom. Murmuring brooks, » purling streams, and sequestered groves, whatever the » fictions of a poetical imagination may have advanced, » are not always the seat of unmingled pleasure, nor the » abode of uninterrupted happiness.

» The blooming rose is an utter stranger to the regions » of ambition; where gloomy clouds perpetually obscure » the beams of the joyful sun; where the gentle zephyrs » never waft through the groves, but discordant blasts are » perpetually howling, and where the climate produces » only thorns and nettles.

» The rose reaches its highest perfection in the garden » of industry, where the soil is neither too luxuriant, nor » too much impoverished. Temperance fans it with the » gentlest breezes, and health and contentment sport around » it. Here the nettle no sooner makes its appearance, » than the watchful eye of prudence espies it; and, though » it may not be possible totally to eradicate it, it is never » suffered to reach to any height of perfection.

» Since then human life is but a garden, in which weeds

» and flowers promiscuously shoot up and thrive : let us
» do what we can to encourage the culture of the rose,
» and guard against the spreading nettle. However barren
» may be the soil that falls to our lot, a careful and assi-
» duous culture will contribute not a little to make the gar-
» den, at least, pleasing and cheerful. »

DÉVELOPPEMENTS.

On demande des réflexions sur une phrase ou sur une pensée quelconque.

Exemple :

I CANNOT HELP IT.

How many there are who endeavour to justify their faults by these few words : « I cannot help it. » But first let us stop to consider from whence springs this thought in every way so deserving of blame. Why man is at all times ready to accuse others of his own guilt, and he thus attempts to deeive himself and all those by whom he is surrounded, never thinking what little hope of success can be expected from such conduct. However they express a certain feeling of indifference and contempt of the world's opinion when in reality they only serve to conceal the fears of a cowardly heart which shrinks from open censure.

On the contrary how much more noble and generous is he, who scorning to deliver himself from just reproaches at the expense of another openly acknowledges his fault which thus becomes much less painful to bear as he is animated by the secret consciousness of having acted in an

upright manner for sooner or later remorse is sure to come and show the uselessness of saying, *I cannot help it.*

DISCOURS ET MORCEAUX ORATOIRES.

The speech of Nicholaus, the old Syracusan, against putting the Athenian generals to Death.

» You here behold an unfortunate father who has felt » more than any other Syracusan the fatal effects of this » war, by the death of two sons who formed all his con- » solation, and were the only support of his old age. I can- » not, indeed, forbear admiring their courage and felicity, » in sacrificing to their country's welfare a life of which » they would one day have been deprived by the common » course of nature; but then I cannot but be strongly affec- » ted with the cruel wound which their death has made in » my heart, nor forbear hating and detesting the Athe- » nians, the authors of this unhappy war, as the murde- » rers of my children. I cannot, however, conceal one cir- » cumstance, which is, that I am less sensible of my pri- » vate affliction than of the honour of my country, and I see » it exposed to eternal infamy by the barbarous advice » which is now given you. The Athenians, indeed, merit the » worst treatment, and every kind of punishment that can » be inflicted on them, for so unjustly declaring war » against us: but have not the gods, the just avengers of » crimes, punished them, and revenged us, sufficiently? » When their generals laid down their arms, and surren- » dered, did they not do this in hopes of having their lives » spared? And if we put them to death, will it be possible

» for us to avoid the just reproach of our having violated
» the laws of nations, and dishonored our victory by an
» unheard of cruelty? How! will you suffer your glory to
» be thus sullied in the face of the whole world, and have
» it said, that a nation, who first dedicated a temple in
» their city to clemency, had not found any in yours? Su-
» rely victories and triumphs do not give immortal glory
» to a city; but the exercising of mercy towards a vanquis-
» hed enemy, the using of moderation in the greatest
» prosperity, and fearing to offend the gods by a haughty
» and insolent pride. You doubtless have not forgot that
» this Nicias, whose fate you are going to pronounce, was
» the very man who pleaded your cause in the assembly of
» the Athenians, and employed all his credit, and the
» whole power of his eloquence to dissuade his country
» from embarking in this war; should you therefore pro-
» nounce sentence of death on this worthy general, would
» it be a just reward for the zeal he showed for your inte-
» rest? With regard to myself, death would be less gri-
» evous to me than the sight of so horrid an injustice com-
» mitted by my countrymen and fellow citizens. »

DIALOGUES.

Bayes's rules of composition.

SMITH.

» How, Sir, helps for wit!

BAYES.

» Ay, Sir, that's my position: and I do here aver,

» that no man the sun e'er shone upon, has parts suffi-
» cient to furnish out a stage, except it were by the help of
» these my rules.

SMITH.

» What are those rules, I pray?

BAYES.

» Why, my first rule is the rule of transversion; or *re-*
» *gula duplex*, changing verse into prose, and prose into
» verse, alternately, as you please.

SMITH.

» Well, but how is this done by rule, Sir?

BAYES.

» Why thus, Sir; nothing so easy when understood.
» I take a book in my hand, either at home or elsewhere,
» (for that's all one) if there be any wit in it (as there is no
» book but has some) I transverse it; that is, if it be prose,
» put it into verse; (but that takes up some time) and if it
» be verse, put it into prose.

SMITH.

» Methinks, Mr. Bayes, that putting verse into prose,
» should be called transprosing.

BAYES.

» By my troth, Sir, it is a very good motion, and
» hereafter it shall be so.

SMITH.

» Well, Sir, and what d'ye do with it then?

BAYES.

» Make it my own: 'tis so changed, that no man can
» know it. My next rule is the rule of concord, by way of
» table-book. Pray observe.

SMITH.

» I hear you, Sir: go on.

BAYES.

» As thus: — I come into a coffee house, or some other
» place where witty men resort; I make as if I minded no-
» thing, (do ye mark?) but as soon as any one speaks —
» pop, I slap it down, and make that too my own.

SMITH.

» But, Mr. Bayes, are you not sometimes in danger of
» their making you restore by force, what you have
» gotten thus by art?

BAYES.

» No, Sir, the world's unmindful; they never take no-
» tice of these things.

SMITH.

» But pray, Mr. Bayes, among all your other rules,
« have you no one rule for invention?

BAYES.

» Yes, Sir, that's my third rule: — That I have here in
» my pocket.

SMITH

» What rule can that be, I wonder?

BAYES.

« Why, Sir, when I have any thing to invent, I never » trouble my head about it, as other men do, but pre- » sently turn over my book of drama common-places, » and there I have, at one view, all that Persius, Montai- » gne, Seneca's Tragedies; Horace, Jovenal, Claudian, » Pliny, Plutarch's Lives, and the rest, have ever thought » upon this subject; and so, in a trice, by leaving out a » few words, or putting in others of my own — the busi- » is done. »

SMITH.

« Indeed, Mr Bayes, this is as sure and compendious a » way of wit as ever I heard of. »

BAYES.

« Sir, if you make the least scruple of the efficacy of » these my rules, do but come to the play-house, and you » shall judge of them by the effects. — But now, pray, Sir, » may I ask how do you do when you write? »

SMITH.

« Faith, Sir, for the most part, I am in pretty good » health. »

BAYES.

« Aye, but I mean, what do you do when you write? »

SMITH.

« I take pen, ink and paper, and sit down. »

BAYES.

« Now I write standing; that's one thing: and then ano- » ther tring is — with what do you prepare yourself? »

SMITH.

« Prepare myself! What the devil does the fool mean? »

BAYES.

« Why, I'll tell you now what I do: — If I am to
» write familiar things, as sonnets to Armida, and the
» like, I make use of stew'd prunes only; but when I have
» a grand design in hand, I ever take physic, and let blood:
» for when you would have pure swiftness of thought, and
» fiery flights of fancy, you must have a care of the pensive
» part; — in fine you must purge the belly. »

SMITH.

« By my troth, Sir, this is a most admirable receipt for
» writing. »

BAYES.

« Aye, 'tis my secret; and, in good earnest, I think one
» of the best I have. »

SMITH.

« In good faith, Sir, and that may very well be. »

BAYES.

« May be, Sir! I'm sure on't. *Experto crede Roberto.* But
» I must give you this caution by the way — be sure you
» never take snuff when you write. »

SMITH.

« Why so, Sir? »

BAYES.

« Why, it spoiled me once one of the sparkishest plays

» in all England. But a friend of mine at Gresham-college ; » has promised to help me to some spirit of brains — and » that shall do my business. »

PARALLÈLES.

Cicero and Demosthenes compared.

The different manners of those two princes of eloquence and the distinguishing character of each are so strongly marked in their writings, that the comparison is, in many respects, obvious and easy. The character of Demosthenes is vigour and austerity; that of Cicero is gentleness and insinuation. In the one you find more manliness, in the other more ornament. The one is more harsh, but more spirited and cogent; the other more agreeable, but withal, looser and weaker.

It is a disadvantage to Demosthenes, that, besides his conciseness, which sometimes produces obscurity, the language in which he writes, is less familiar to most of us than the latin, and that we are less acquainted with the Greek antiquities than we are with the Roman. We read Cicero with more ease, and of course with more pleasure. Independent of this circumstance too, he is no doubt, in himself, a more agreeable writer than the other. But notwithstanding this advantage, I am of opinion, that were the state in danger, or some great national interest at stake, which drew the serious attention of the public, an oration in the spirit and strain of Demosthenes, would have more weight, and produce greater effects than one in the Ciceronian manner. Were Demosthenes's philippics spoken in a British assembly, in a similar conjuncture of

affairs; they would convince and persuade at this day. The rapid style, the vehement reasoning, the disdain, anger, boldness, freedom, which perpetually animate them, would render their success infallible over any modern assembly. I question whether the same can be said of Cicero's orations, whose eloquence, however beautiful, and however well suited to the Roman taste, yet borders oftener on declamation, and is more remote from the manner in which we now expect to hear real business and causes of importance treated.

Pour les caractères moraux, on en trouve un exemple dans le portrait de M. William Tornhill (whimsicalman) placé dans le troisième chapitre du *Vicaire*. Il sera facile de l'imiter, après en avoir tiré une règle générale pour les compositions de cette espèce.

TRADUCTION DE FAITS.

Lorsque pour l'expression d'un fait, d'un sentiment, on se sert de l'expression employée pour un fait ou pour un sentiment analogue, on fait une simple imitation. On apprend ainsi le langage consacré, les expressions convenues de l'idiôme qu'on étudie. Mais comme on le reconnaît bientôt, cela devient une étude restreinte, qui ne s'étend pas au-delà des phrases, et l'on ne possède encore qu'une faible partie des ressources dont l'homme a besoin pour communiquer avec les hommes. En effet, quand il s'agit de transmettre des pensées et des sentimens, il ne suffit pas de connaître la valeur exacte des mots et des expressions, il

faut de plus connaître les moyens d'intéresser ceux à qui l'on parle ; il faut, en autres mots, que la connaissance du cœur humain vienne en aide à celle de la langue. Par conséquent, c'est l'écrivain qu'il est désormais urgent de considérer avec attention , et tel est l'objet de l'exercice appelé *traduction*.

Quand l'élève comprend un paragraphe, un chapitre, etc., il lui est facile de concevoir dans quelle intention ou dans *quel esprit* les mots ont été employés d'après les faits. Il peut apprécier la manière dont l'écrivain sait faire usage des moyens qui sont à sa disposition pour atteindre le but qu'il se propose ; et pénétrant ainsi cette pensée *dirigeante*, s'il m'est permis de l'indiquer de la sorte, l'élève se l'approprie pour imiter la marche qui en est la conséquence , dans les cas où il en juge l'application immédiate.

D'après cela, on peut dire que la *traduction* est une simple imitation de style, de formes; laquelle est déterminée par le rapport qui existe entre ce qu'on veut écrire et le développement oratoire qu'on prend pour modèle.

Dans un même livre, le même écrivain se *traduit* de cent façons diverses; et ce qu'il dit dans un cas, devient, avec les modifications nécessaires, un excellent guide pour tous les autres où il est obligé de transformer et de développer ses pensées.

C'est peut-être l'exercice le plus important dans l'étude d'une langue ; on ne saurait donc le répéter trop souvent, en faisant trouver par l'élève des sujets de traduction.

Voici deux exemples; ils sont pris dans le *Vicaire*.

Traduction de faits d'après le portrait de Jenkinson, XIVe chapitre du Vicaire.

PLEASURE.

Pleasure is an inclination to which man cannot resist. It ever presents itself as by chance; and, firstly seeming alone, it takes up attention the more, as he makes no efforts and appears really to be as one see it. — Thus, pleasure attacks only indirectly our heart, but, by this means, it assures itself of the possession of it. We are weak, and such a temptation would often suffice to conductus to our loss. But pleasure comes further. It continues its indirect attacks. Then the exemple of others, is fatal. Then we lust after entirely abandoning ourselves to our passion. Scarce are we contained by a rest of virtue and pudicity. But, then also, pleasure sees how much we are favourably prepossessed, and it begins to attack us. Never does our heart feel stronger attempt than at seeing this union of awe, modesty and apparent benevolence. Sothat, we give way to pleasure, but left to reflexion, we begin to recollect that we have done wrong; we have remorses; but it is too late and we must suffer the suits of our fault.

---

745 FIRMNESS OF MIND.

TRADUCTION SUR LE DÉPART DE GEORGES POUR L'ARMÉE.

Firmness of mind is one of those virtues which are remarked: in danger, in the most fatal circumstances, when uncertainty and trouble reign every where it seems the only


THE LIBRARY OF CONGRESS


THE LIBRARY OF CONGRESS


LIBRARY OF CONGRESS
0 003 332 285 9